This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

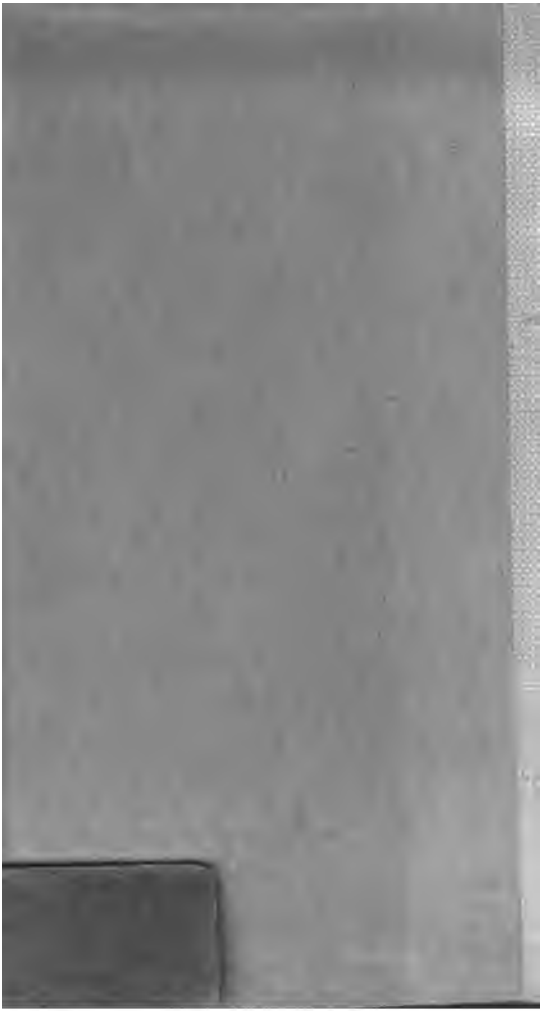
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES
3433 06183019 0



THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

HISTORY OF ENGLAND.

E. F. Burney del. R. Reeve

Vortigern & Rowena!

Published [illegible] by R. Phillips [illegible]

ERSAL HISTORY,

NCIENT AND MODERN;

FROM

EARLIEST RECORDS OF TIME,

TO THE

RAL PEACE OF 1802.

N TWENTY-FIVE VOLUMES.

WILLIAM MAVOR, LL.D.

URLEY IN BERKSHIRE, AND CHAPLAIN TO
THE EARL OF DUMFRIES.

Factorum est copia nobis.

. . . . . .

: regumque, ducumque, et tristia bella.

VOL. XIX.

VOL. X. OF THE MODERN PART.

LONDON:

OR RICHARD PHILLIPS, 71, ST. PAUL'S
CHURCH-YARD;

D SOLD BY ALL BOOKSELLERS.

1803.

T. Gillet, Salisbury-square.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
8[illegible]7
ND
TIONS
R 19[illegible]8 L

THE HISTORY OF ENGLAND,

FROM THE EARLIEST RECORDS,

TO

THE PEACE OF 1801.

BY WILLIAM MAVOR, LL.D.

VICAR OF HURLEY IN BERKSHIRE, CHAPLAIN TO THE EARL OF DUMFRIES,

AUTHOR OF THE BRITISH NEPOS, &c. &c.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR RICHARD PHILLIPS, 71, ST. PAUL'S CHURCH-YARD;

AND SOLD BY ALL BOOKSELLERS.

1803.

Price 3s. 9d. in boards, or 4s. half-bound.

TO THE

RIGHT HONOURABLE

LORD ELDON,

LORD HIGH CHANCELLOR OF GREAT BRITAIN,

THIS FIRST VOLUME

OF

THE HISTORY OF ENGLAND,

IS,

WITH THE MOST PERFECT RESPECT

AND ESTEEM,

INSCRIBED,

BY HIS LORDSHIP'S

MOST OBEDIENT

AND VERY HUMBLE SERVANT,

THE EDITOR.

CONTENTS
OF VOL. XIX.

HAP. I. *General Description of the Country. The Britons—Romans—Saxons—The Heptarchy,* - - - - 1

AP. II. *From the Union of the Kingdoms the Heptarchy under Egbert, to the Norn Conquest,* - - - 38

P. III. *The Reign of William the Conqueror, William Rufus, Henry I. and Stephen,* 74

. IV. *The Reigns of Henry* II. *Richard* I. *John,* - - - 111

V. *The Reigns of Henry* III. *Edward* I. *Edward* II, - - - 153

VI. *The Reign of Edward* III. - 190

VII. *The Reigns of Richard* II. *Henry nd Henry* V, - - 222

III. *The Reigns of Henry* VI. *Edward* V. *and Edward* V, - - 259

. *The Reigns of Richard* III. *and* II. - - - 324

The Reign of Henry VIII. - 359

THE

HISTORY

OF

ENGLAND.

CHAP. I.

al Description of the Country. The Britons—Romans—Saxons—The Heptarchy.

NGLAND, including Wales, occupies the southern and by far the most extensive of the island, called by its primitive inhas, *Ynys Prydain*, or the beautiful isle, ce it had the name of Britain among other is; and it was also called *Ynys Wen*, or island, which is the origin of the appella- Albion among the Greeks: and now, in ction with Scotland, it constitutes the m of Great Britain. The derivation of rd England is from *Anglen*, a province ject to Denmark, which furnished a great the Saxon adventurers who established es in this division of the island.

nd being everywhere surrounded by the pt where it unites with Scotland, enjoys ural advantage of commerce and secu- before it knew the art of deriving pro- m a powerful navy, it was exposed to ıvasion, and has several times invited st of nations who were more early skilled e affairs. Its general figure is trian-

 gular:

gular: one extremity points to the north, anot to the east, and the third to the west. Of three sides, the western is not only the long but also the most irregular, being indented broken by various tongues of land and arms of sea. A straight line drawn from the Land's-en Cornwall, to Berwick upon Tweed, will give the western side 425 miles; the same drawn fi Berwick to the South Foreland in Kent, will m the eastern side 345 miles long; and from South Foreland to the Land's-end will give a of 340 miles for the southern side. To fol the trendings of the sea, however, would va increase those measurements, and render three sides not less than 1500 miles.

England, viewed as a whole, affords all t beautiful variety which can be found in the n extensive tracts of the globe. In some distri verdant plains extend as far as the eye can re watered by noble streams, and covered v innumerable flocks and herds: in others, charming vicissitudes of gently ascending l and winding vales, rich in corn, or waving v woods and dotted with flowery meadows, pre the most delightful landscapes that fancy form. Nor are prospects of a more sublime romantic kind wanting: lofty mountains, cra rocks, deep and narrow glens, and foaming rents, occasionally contrast with barren m and wide uncultivated heaths. Yet, from bounties of Nature, aided by the industry of inhabitants, few countries possess a smaller portion of land that is incapable of tillage improvement; though millions of acres still main unreclaimed, and invite the labours of plough.

In general, the middle and the southern parts of England possess the most fertile soil and the most cultivated aspect. Towards the north, it rises into mountains, or expands into moors; while the eastern coast, in many places, is either sandy or marshy. To the west, or in the principality of Wales, the whole country is mountainous, intermixed, however, with vales of great fertility and beauty. Another range of hills, sometimes rising to Alpine heights, extends from the borders of Scotland to the very heart of this country, running from north to south, and forming a natural division between the eastern and western sides of the kingdom. Various ranges of less extent or elevation present themselves in different parts; such as the Chiltern hills in Bucks, the Malvern in Worcestershire, the Cotteswould in Gloucestershire, and the Wrekin in Shropshire. The county of Cornwall, which is a great promontory, jutting into the Atlantic Ocean, is altogether a rude and hilly tract, containing infinitely more riches in its bowels than on its surface.

There are few countries better watered by rivers than England, and none possesses more numerous shores, in proportion to its extent; though, from the shortness of their courses they have in gener[illegible] to run, few of its streams swell to the magni[illegible]le of continental rivers. Those of the northe[illegible]n parts, arising from the middle ridge of hills, have but a short distance to the sea, whichever direction they take. In the midland districts, however, the Trent and the Ouse run a considerable way before their efflux into the sea. The Severn, taking a very circuitous course flows over a space which renders it deservedly consider-

considered as the second river in England. T
Thames, which bears on its bosom the wealth
many nations, is also, in point of length and m
nitude, the first river in this country.

The lakes of Westmoreland and Cumberl
are more remarkable for their picturesque ef
than for their extent. In most other coun
they are rare and inconsiderable.

The deep indentings of the coasts, furn
many bays, creeks, and inlets, some of which
capacious and extensive. Beginning in the e
ern coast, the Humber is a considerable arm
the sea, into which several rivers pour their tri
tary streams. The Wash is the next most
portant inlet on this side: it is broad, but
shallow, that the sands appear at low wa
The Thames forms a kind of capacious fun
for the discharge of its waters, between the co
of Essex and Kent. At the straits of Do
the island approaches within seven or ei
leagues of the continent: farther on, the be
tiful Isle of Wight, the harbour of Portsmou
and Southampton Water, break the regularit
the coast, and furnish much agreeable diver
of situation. Beyond Southampton, there
numerous other bays and inlets in the prog
of the coast towards the Land's-end; and in tu
ing this point, St. George's or the Bristol ch
nel opens, which, with the broad æstuary of
Severn, deeply indents the broadest part of
island.

The opposite coast of Wales is broken
various bays and inlets; of which Milford-ha
is one of the first in Europe, nor is the deep
large bay of Cardigan unworthy of notice.
yond this, Anglesea, repelling the waters of

T

sea, gives a new direction to the coast, , running inwards along the shores of Lan- e and Cumberland, receives many broad llow streams. Solway firth next succeeds, ogether with the Cheviot hills and the l, form something like a natural boundary n England and Scotland.

egard to climate, England cannot boast ial suns and balmy zephyrs; yet it is suf- ly temperate to allow the enjoyment of the ir, even in the severest season of the year. mosphere, however, as is common in most situations, is inclined to chilness, and loaded vapours, subject to frequent and sudden es, and more favourable to vegetation o the health of the inhabitants. No coun- clothed with such a beautiful and durable e during the spring and summer; but the ts frequently suffer from tempestuous particularly in the northern districts; and its often fall short of perfect maturity, and ore seldom arrive at the rich flavour which quishes the productions of warmer climes. compensate for these disadvantages, how- neither the rigours of winter nor the heats mer are felt to such a degree as in paral- ntinental climates; for while the harbours olland and Germany are annually locked h ice, those of England, and even of Scot- are happily exempted from this inconve- . It should be observed likewise, that the n side of the kingdom, receiving first an mulation of clouds from the Atlantic Ocean, meet with an obstruction in their passage he central chain of hills, is much more ed to rain than the eastern; but the latter.

as if Nature was an impartial distributer of favours, is more frequently involved in fogs mists. On the whole, however, if we except p of Lincolnshire, Cambridgeshire, Essex, Kent, the air is sufficiently salubrious; and stances of longevity occur in every district every situation, which may vie with the m favoured regions. The modes of living, ind co-operating with the density and variabilit the atmosphere, produce a long train of nerv complaints, which diminish the enjoyment of istence; but they do not seem to have any v considerable influence on its duration.

Originally the island of Great Britain se to have been almost wholly overrun with wo and solely peopled with the inhabitants of forest. The wolf, the bear, the wild boar, w long the uncontrolled rangers of the woo but their race has for several generations b totally extinct. Stags, roebucks, and wild cat ranged the sylvan scenes, bounded over the hi or grazed in the meadows, without fear without annoyance from man; but by degr the forests were destroyed, in order to make v for cultivation; the marshes were drained; the wild beasts, driven from their native hau gave place to such as were reclaimed and r dered useful auxiliaries to man.

From the continent, however, came our m valuable productions, both animal and vege ble: the former have been improved by long sedulous care, and are now superior to those the countries from which they were origina introduced; and if in any respect the latter su in competition, it is only from causes not in man power to alter—the air and the climate.

Engla

England, now exempted from any formid
wild quadrupeds, has none that can dispute
mastery with man, and but few to annoy
either in his person or property. The fox,
wild cat, the badger, the marten, the weasel,
otter, the hedgehog, the mole, the rat, and
mouse, are almost the only quadrupeds th
remain to disturb us. Of these the rat, small
it is, from its destructive habits, is infinite
the most troublesome. The hare, the rabbi
and the squirrel, are inoffensive and pleasing.

On the other hand, our domestic animals ar
unrivalled. The English horse has no equal fo
spirit, strength, and fleetness. The horned cat
le have been brought to the highest degree of
erfection, both as to size and figure. The dif
erent breeds of English sheep are variously
istinguished for the delicacy or quantity of their
sh, and the fineness or abundance of their wool.
he deer of our parks and forests are of superior
auty; and our dogs, of every species, are deserv
y admired for courage, strength, and sagacity.

The vegetable productions of this country,
t of which were drawn from other regions,
ulture have acquired all the perfection which
climate will allow. Nuts, acorns, crabs, and
r wild berries, were originally all the indi
us articles of food which our woods could
. To foreign countries, and our own in
y, we are indebted for the bread we eat, our
ruits, and our garden vegetables. Horti
e, indeed, has been carried to a height in
nd, which other nations have in vain at
d to reach. Where Nature fails, art has
ost successfully called in to her aid; and

the

the fruits of the tropics may now be seen covering the tables of the rich.

The birds that inhabit our groves, and delight the ear with their harmony, are as numerous and as various as in any populous and cultivated country. Wild fowl in some counties are extremely plentiful; and domestic poultry every where abounds.

The seas and rivers of England are stocked with a great variety of beautiful fish. From the deep, thousands derive a subsistence; and policy has lately displayed itself in encouraging the fisheries, as a source of wealth and of power.

The manufactures of England need only be named to be allowed superiority over those of the rest of the globe. Industry, application, a spirit of enterprise, and steadiness of action, characterise the inhabitants of this country, who, according to a late enumeration, may amount to nearly ten millions; but who have achieved more in arms and in arts than double the number in any other nation on earth.

All ancient writers who have treated of the origin of the first inhabitants of Britain, represent them to have been the same people as the Gauls, who are also more extensively recognized in history under the appellation of Celts, and as the first race of men that spread over Europe, the greatest part of which was in their possession, until within about four hundred years of the christian era, when these Gothic tribes began to press to the westward from the shores of the Euxine. The historical memorials of the Britons themselves, corroborate such a statement;

vision of Gaul, called Aquitania, and
were the Celts of that part of the con-
earest to Britain, who were called Bry-
men of tumult, synonymous with which
l the well-known appellation of Bel-
These were the three primary settlers of
d, of the same original stock, speaking
on language, with some diversity of dia-
der the same forms of government, the
ligion, and sympathizing in the same
and customs. The temperate regions,
estward, were explored by them in very
eriods; so that according to some wri-
tain received its first colonies upwards
centuries before the commencement of
tian era. The last of the three colonies
entioned is supposed to have come over
three and four hundred years before
o have extended themselves through the
parts of the island, so that after the
some ages they contributed to the popu-

test influence attached to him, his were the
tions most sought after. Therefore the
s appeared most conspicuous in this class to
gers; so that ancient writers have generally
ded the other two orders in that of the
ds. The ovates were such of the bards as de-
d themselves to particular arts and sciences:
this was the only character in which they
permitted to hold private meetings; the
r classes were obliged to assemble, as they
essed it, in the eye of the light and in the
of the sun. Each of the three orders wore
ppropriate dress: that of the bards in gene-
was of sky-blue colour, emblematic of light,
ruth, and tranquillity; white, as a mark of
ty, appertained to the druids; and the ovates
green, denoting that the knowledge of ter-
ial things was the object of their pursuits.
he fundamental object and principles of the
ic system were the search after truth, and a
adherence to justice and peace. They

the arm of slaughter, while they executed
missions. But this state of disinterested
was at length the means of procuring to th
der the supreme influence in the nation, b
perversion of its original principles: amon
Gauls, we learn that the office of arch-drui
established and made permanent, in direc
lation of those principles; and the high
had acquired so great an ascendency,
struggle successfully against the Roman
for nearly five hundred years. The leadi
nets in the bardic religion were these: the
lieved in the existence of one supreme Bein
whom they reasoned that he could not be
rial, and that what was not matter, m
God. The soul was considered to be a l
ntelligence under a total privation of
ledge, or happiness, by its falling to the l
point of existence. To regain the state of
lect, it had to pass through all the interm
modes of existence. For such a purpos
this earth created, as well as other innum
worlds; that is, as means of approximating
nally through varied states of being towar
deity. Farther, that this earth was orig
covered with water, which gradually subs
land animals arose, of the lowest and leas
fect species, thus corresponding in organi
with the then capacity of the soul. New
in the scale of being were successively pro
from these, continually improving in form
augmenting the capacity of intellect, so t
the course of ages, man ultimately appear
most perfect receptacle of the soul on this
Then the soul had so augmented its facul

the state of man for a renewed proba-
When the soul became attached to good,
as its release to a higher existence, where
of memory was done away, so that it
collected the economy of every former
hus being made happy, in the knowledge
animated nature below its then condition.
conceived that in this world, life was gra-
increasing in quantity and perfection;
refore truth and justice were advancing
th, so that the bards looked for a period
ose attributes should prevail over the
es of evil and devastation; that when the
arrived, man would then make rapid
hes towards the summit of that perfec-
ich the terrestrial state is susceptible of;
n the consummation of such an event, the
of this world would be answered, and it
e then destroyed by fire.

was the original system of the bards;
all other systems of theology it was

no clothing, wearing only rings of i
their necks and arms. There was a
custom among most of the tribes, o
themselves with woad, when they w
tle, so as to appear more terrible to
mies; and some used to delineate the
flowers, trees, and animals on their
infusing the juice of the same plant
sions made through the skin. They s
hair of their heads to grow long; b
their beards, excepting the upper li
houses were generally built of woo
vered with reeds. The towns, or villa
confused parcel of such houses, pl
small distance apart, and, generally
situated in woods, having the avenue
by slight ramparts of earth, or with
that were cut down to clear the gr
those who dwelt in exposed and hilly
fortified themselves upon eminences
lar entrenchments of earth.

The only commerce, which the Br
was carried on with the neighbourin
Gaul; excepting the occasional voya
have been performed by the Phœnicia
cure the tin found in the extremities o
sent Cornwall. The Romans extol
being simple and upright in their
What they used for current money, c

igs and thin plates of iron, or brass, we
a certain standard: the iron was of thei
oduction, the brass was imported.
On account of the nature of their constitu
hich divided them into small rival states
itons were so inured to war, as to be exte
Cæsar, for their valour and the undaun
avery with which they went to battle. Ot
iters describe them as not only warlike, but
lighting in slaughter. Armed lightly, ge
lly with a spear and shield, their mode
hting was desultory, making impetuous a
cks on their enemies in small parties, havin
eir appointed stations, so that one detachmen
ceeded another, thus relieving the weary
th fresh troops, as the occasion demanded.
t there was one branch in the art of war, the
nagement of their chariots, wherein their prin-
al strength consisted, which they had carried
wonderful perfection; and which was of so
nidable a nature as to throw the Roman army
consternation. It may not be improper to
Cæsar's own description of their skill in this
of warfare: "They first drive to all parts
their chariots, and throw their darts; and
frequently break the ranks, by the prancing
eir steeds, and the noise of the wheels.
they get among the horse, they alight
ne chariots and fight on foot; the chario-
n the mean while, draw off a little from
agement, and place themselves in such a
, that if these should be overpowered by
ny, they may have an easy retreat to the
. By these means they manœuvre and
tle with the rapidity of the cavalry, and
ess of the infantry. So dexterous are

scythes and hooks, and carrying only the c
who, as opportunities offered, drove in th
the broken ranks of the enemy. The hors
ployed in drawing those vehicles were of
size; and their harness is described as h
been splendidly decorated with ornaments.

B. C. 55. Such was the state of Britain, a time when Cæsar was pursuing his of glory among the Gauls: and, to o whom a very large army of auxiliaries is s in the historical memorials of the Brito have gone from this island, under the co of Caswallon, and his nephews Gwenwy and Gwanar; the former of whom we sha in the sequel, raised to a pre-eminent st among his countrymen, and, in opposin conqueror of the world, his name stand mortalized in history. The Britons havi the wars carried on by Cæsar in Gaul, co rably assisted his enemies, this gave a sp pretence to his ambitious mind, and he with avidity the idea of adding unknow gions, or sort of new world, to the conque had made on the continent. Cæsar the collected together eighty ships at Calai board of which he embarked two legions, which he appeared on the coast of Britain

l

ded near Deal in Kent, in the month of Au-
t; and, after a short campaign, obtained the
minal submission of the islanders. After
sar had returned to Gaul, the Britons ne-
cting to send the hostages, which they had
ulated to do, he employed the following
iter, in preparing for another more formidable
cent on the island; so that early in the suc-
ding summer he had collected together about
ht hundred ships, on board of which he put
e legions of infantry, with two thousand ca-
ry, forming altogether an army of upwards
thirty thousand men. Since the departure of
ir invader, the British chiefs had not been
; for, as they anticipated this impending
rm, they had alarmed the more distant re-
ns to a sense of common danger; and, as the
t effort of their union, Caswallon, the chief of
territory, generally included in the present
nties of Essex and Middlesex, was elected by
different states, to the supreme command; a
ftain who had already signalized himself in
ny wars with his neighbours; and, as before
erved, had been over in Gaul. This was the
t instance in their history, of the Britons
king such an attempt to consolidate their
ver; and it seems to have awakened conside-
le jealousy among some of their leaders: and,
otherwise unaccountable plan adopted, of
opposing the landing of the invaders, is at-
nted to the treachery of a party among them,
ded by Avarwy, or Mandubratius, who car-
l this measure in a counsil previously held.
tain it is, that the Romans landed without
appearance of an enemy; nor did they meet
h any, until they had proceeded to the banks

of

of the river Stour in Kent. After several severe conflicts, the Britons were a second time compelled to submit to the fortune of Cæsar, and on the terms of peace being concluded, he returned with his army into Gaul.

A. D. 43. About a century afterwards, in the reign of Claudius, the Roman ensigns were again displayed in Britain; the rude inhabitants were broken in several battles by Plautius; and the Cantii, the Atrebates, the Regni, and the Trinobantes, who inhabited the south-east parts of the island, were obliged to submit. The other Britons, under Caractacus, still maintained an obstinate resistance, until that celebrated leader was defeated and taken prisoner on the banks of the Severn, by Ostorius.

A. D. 59. The captivity of Caractacus, however, had not entirely subdued the spirit of the Britons; and Suetonius, who, in the reign of Nero, penetrated into the island of Anglesey, was astonished by the general revolt of a people whom he considered as subdued. Inflamed by the indignant reproaches of Boadicea, the queen of the Iceni, the Britons started to arms. The Romans were obliged to abandon London, already a flourishing colony, and seventy thousand of them were imprisoned and massacred by the exasperated natives. Their fate, however, was soon after avenged by Suetonius in a bloody and decisive battle, in which eighty thousand Britons are supposed to have perished; and Boadicea, rather than submit to the victor, put an end to her life by poison.

A. D. 86. Julius Agricola, who governed Britain, in the reigns of Vespasian, Titus, and Domitian, formed a regular plan for subduing

the island, and rendering the acquisi-
il to the conquerors. To effect this, he
is victorious arms northwards; pierced
s and mountains of Caledonia; defeated
rians in various encounters; and having
ain of forts between the Friths of Clyde
h, he secured the Roman province from
sions of its ferocious neighbours.

l and success in war, Agricola united a
e of the arts of peace. He introduced
arts among the Britons; taught them to
conveniencies of life; reconciled them
man language and manners; and en-
d to render their chains easy. By this
the inhabitants gradually acquiesced
dominion of their masters.

ure them from the irruptions of the
ans, Adrian built a rampart between the
ne, and the Frith of Solway: this was
ned with new fortifications by Severus;
the expedition of that emperor, during
lred years, such a profound tranquillity
in Britain, that little mention is made
airs of that island by any historian. The
isarmed, dispirited, and submissive, had
the idea of their former independence.

hen the Roman empire, sunk into luxury
itude, was assailed by the fierce barba-
he North, and the emperors were obliged
the distant legions to the protection of
al, that part of Britain too which had
n subject to its sway, and softened by
r, found enemies on its frontiers, ready
advantage of its defenceless situation.
s, who were a tribe of the British race
orthwards by the arms of Agrippa,
and

and the Scotch, who were supposed to ha
grated from Ireland, pierced the ramp
Adrian, and extended their ravages ov
fairest part of the country. The emper
longer capable of detaching troops fro
continent to repel them, restored the Brit
their independence; but at the same tin
formed them, they must look to themselv
defence. Accordingly, the Romans took
adieu of Britain, after having been mast
the best portion of it nearly four centuries.

A. D. 448. The abject Britons of the south, customed to the perils of war and th of civil government, found them incapable of resisting the incursions of thei and savage neighbours. The northern wall again overthrown, and the ferocity of th and Scots was augmented by the helpless tion and submissive behaviour of the vanq inhabitants. The latter in vain implore aid of the Romans, in an epistle to Æti patrician, which was inscribed the "Groans Britons." The tenor of the epistle was su to the superscription: "the barbarians," say "on the one hand drive us into the sea; the the other throws us back on the barbarian we have only the hard choice left us of per by the sword or by the waves." The Ro however, at this time pressed by Attila, incapable of yielding them any assistance the unhappy suitors, reduced to despair, attending only to the suggestions of thei fears, and to the counsels of Vortigern, the erful prince of Dumnonium, urgently but invited the protection of the Saxons.

xons had been for some time re- A. D.
one of the most warlike tribes 449.
ny, and had become the terror
ghbouring nations. They had posses-
elves of the sea coast from the mouth
ine to Jutland; and at this period were
ed by Hengist and Horsa, two brothers,
ted their divine descent from the god
These leaders received with pleasure
ion, which was recommended by the
me and plunder; they embarked with
een hundred of their followers, in three
nded near the isle of Thanet, and at-
h confidence and success the northern

vas for themselves alone, and not for
, that they had conquered. The fer-
ritain allured five thousand Saxons to
and Hengist and Horsa having con-
alliance with the Scots and Picts,
y had been invited to resist, turned
immediately against those Britons,
had engaged to protect.
acting on the romanized Britons, sup-
lace of courage; they deposed Vorti-
had led them into this error, and chose
his son Vortimer. They ventured to
perfidious enemies, and, though gene-
ted, one action is distinguished by the
lorsa. His brother Hengist, however,
by his countrymen, still advanced to
paring neither age, nor sex, nor condi-
numbers of the Britons, to escape
uelty or avarice, passed over to the
where, in the province of Armorica
, they were received by a people of
nguage and manners.

During the struggle for independence, Vortimer had expired; and Ambrosius, who succeeded in the chief command over the Britons, united them in their resistance to the Saxons: yet Hengist maintained his ground; and while he settled his brother Octa in Northumberland, he formed into a kingdom, and bequeathed to his posterity, the counties of Kent, Middlesex, Essex, and part of Surrey. His success allured new swarms from the northern coasts of Germany; the southern Britons gradually receded before the invaders, or submitted to their sway; and Ælla, another Saxon chief, founded the kingdom of the South Saxons, comprising Sussex, and that portion of Surrey which Hengist had not occupied.

The settlement of the West Saxons in Hampshire, Dorsetshire, Wiltshire, Berkshire, and the Isle of Wight, perpetuates the name of Cerdic, and his son Kenric; but it was not till after many a bloody conflict, that these adventurers enjoyed in peace the harvests of their toils. They were opposed by Arthur, prince of the Silures, whose heroic valour suspended the declining fate of his country, and whose name has been celebrated by Taliesin, and the other British bards. Of this prince many fictions are related; yet it appears, from incontestable evidence, that both in personal and mental powers he excelled the generality of the human race.

Reiterated success, and ample scope for more allured fresh tribes of Saxons to follow in the same track. In 575, Uffa assumed the title of king of the East Angles; in 585 Crida, that of Mercia, and Erkenwint that of the East Saxons this latter was dismembered from that of Kent and comprehended Essex, Middlesex, and par

of

The Saxons had been for some time regarded as one of the most warlike tribes of Germany, and had become the terror of the neighbouring nations. They had possessed themselves of the sea coast from the mouth of the Rhine to Jutland; and at this period were commanded by Hengist and Horsa, two brothers, who boasted their divine descent from the god Woden. These leaders received with pleasure an invitation, which was recommended by the hope of fame and plunder; they embarked with about sixteen hundred of their followers, in three vessels, landed near the isle of Thanet, and attacked with confidence and success the northern invaders. A. D. 449.

But it was for themselves alone, and not for their allies, that they had conquered. The fertility of Britain allured five thousand Saxons to join them; and Hengist and Horsa having concluded an alliance with the Scots and Picts, whom they had been invited to resist, turned their arms immediately against those Britons, whom they had engaged to protect.

Despair acting on the romanized Britons, supplied the place of courage; they deposed Vortigern, who had led them into this error, and chose in his stead his son Vortimer. They ventured to meet their perfidious enemies, and, though generally defeated, one action is distinguished by the death of Horsa. His brother Hengist, however, reinforced by his countrymen, still advanced to victory; sparing neither age, nor sex, nor condition; and numbers of the Britons, to escape from his cruelty or avarice, passed over to the continent, where, in the province of Armorica or Brittany, they were received by a people of

years, the victors languished in peace; b
the accession of Ethelbert their ardour was
revived; and though the new monarch w
successful in his first enterprises, he soon a
ed an absolute ascendancy over the minc
councils of his countrymen, by the defeat
king of Wessex.

Yet the reign of Ethelbert is still more re
able, for the introduction of the christia
gion amongst the Saxon conquerors of B
Ethelbert had married Bertha, the daugh
Caribert, king of Paris; the princess had
lated for the free exercise of her religion; a F
bishop had accompanied her to the co
Canterbury; and her influence over Eth
confirmed the Roman pontiff, Gregory
GREAT, in the hopes he had early indulg
converting the British Saxons.

That prelate, while yet in a private st
had observed in the market-place of Rome
Saxon youth exposed to sale, whom the R
merchants, in their trading voyages to B
had bought of their parents. Struck with
fair complexions, and blooming counten
he asked to what country they belonged;
told they were Angles, he replied, they
rather to be denominated angels, and lam
that the prince of darkness should enjoy s
a prey. Inquiring the name of their pro
he was informed it was Deira, a district of N
umberland; "Deiri," exclaimed he, "t
good; they are called to the mercy of Goc
his anger, *de ira*. But what is the name
king of that province?" He was told it was Æ
Alla: "Alleluia," cried he; "we must ende
that the praises of God be sung in their cou

N

l by these allusions, he was making prepa-
s for the perilous attempt, when the esteem
countrymen raised him to the pontificate,
mpelled him to commit the pious design to
stine, a Roman monk, and forty associates.
herto the Saxons had worshipped A. D.
n, whom they believed to be the 597.
or of their princes, and regarded as
d of war: they fancied if they obtained
vour of this divinity, by their valour, they
l be admitted after death into his hall;
eposing on couches, should satiate them-
with ale from the skulls of their enemies
they had slain in battle. But the other
rn conquerors of Europe having already
d the christian faith, the Saxons could not
regarding with veneration a doctrine that
ed the ascendancy over their German bre-

The manners and address of Bertha had
ved the favourable prepossession; and
Augustine arrived in Kent, he found his
hensions agreeably disappointed, and Ethel-
ell disposed to listen to his precepts, and
prospects of eternal joy which he disclosed.
ir words and promises," said Ethelbert,
fair; but, because they are new and uncer-
I cannot entirely yield to them, and relin-
the principles which I and my ancestors
so long maintained: you are welcome,
er, to remain here in peace; and as you
undertaken so long a journey, solely as
rs for what you believe to be our ad-
ge, I will supply you with all necessaries,
ermit you to deliver your doctrine to my
ts."

Augustine now proceeded to preach the pel with the warmest zeal to the Kentish Sa his self-denial excited their admiration; hi selytes were numerous; and the king hi was soon persuaded to receive the rite of bap His conversion as well as his marriage with tha, produced a connexion with the Fr Italians, and other nations on the continent tended to reclaim his subjects from the gro norance and barbarism in which the Saxon been involved. Ethelbert was also a wise lator, and, after a glorious and beneficial of fifty years, he died, lamented and esteen

His son and successor, Eadbald, seduced passion for his mother-in-law, deserted for time the christian religion, which permitte such incestuous marriages; but he was recla by the holy artifice of Laurentius, the succ of Augustine; and returning with his peop christianity, expired after a reign of twenty years, leaving two sons, Ermenfrid and Er bert.

Ercombert, the younger, possessed hims the throne, and, after reigning twenty-four y bequeathed it to his son Egbert. To secur possession of it, Egbert put to death the so Ermenfrid; yet this cruel precaution wa sufficient to transmit it peaceably to his i and his son Edric was thrust aside by the s ger arm of Lothaire, the brother of Eg Edric solicited the assistance of the king of sex; and in an obstinate battle Lothaire was The victor enjoyed his fortune but two y and was succeeded by his brother Widred a strong faction invited Cedwalla, king of sex, with his brother Mollo, to attack the

rival chiefs urged their pretensions
sword. Egbert, who first succeeded,
it two years; Cuthred, brother to the
ercia, six years; Baldred, an illegiti-
ch of the royal family, eighteen; and
bulent and precarious reign, he A. D.
ed by Egbert, king of Wessex, 723.
olving the Saxon heptarchy,
several kingdoms under his dominion,
erior power and address.

nberland was governed by Adelfrid,
ories over the Scots, the Picts, and the
read around the terror of the Saxon
his success in war could not relieve
the dread of Edwin, whom he had
of the kingdom of Deira. That prince,
by Redwald, king of the East Angles,
enetrated into Northumberland, and
ng Adelfrid in a battle, deprived him
n and life. The vacant throne was
by Elfrid, by Edwin, who was distin-

daughter of Ethelbert; and that prince
lating the conduct of her mother Bert
persuaded her husband to receive the
baptism. The example of Edwin was
followed by his subjects; and he had t
faction of perceiving the majority of t
thumbrians had embraced christianity,
was summoned from the internal regul
the defence of his kingdom. He perish
his son Osfrid, in a battle with Penda
Mercia, and Cadwallon king of the Br
the 17th year of his reign.

On the death of Edwin, the kingdom o
umberland was rent by contending princ
A. D. 634. an interval of ten years, it was r
by Oswald, the son of Adelfrid,
like his predecessor in battle, a
succeeded by his brother Oswy. From h
during a dark and turbulent period of a
hundred years, the throne was successive
by Egfrid, Alfred, Ofred, Kenred, Os
wulph, Eadbert, Oswolf, Mollo, Ailrec
red, Celwold, Osred the second, and Et
the majority of these were the victims
ambition of their rivals, or the seditious
their subjects. After the death of Ethell
universal anarchy prevailed in Northuml
and the people having, by so many fatal
tions, lost all attachment to their governm
princes, were well prepared to receive
king of Wessex, for their sovereign.

East Anglia had been compelled by t
of Edwin to acknowledge the authority
wold, the great grandson of Uffa, the
of the monarchy: in compliance with
tector, Earpwold, he had embraced chri

until the accession of Ethelbert, as treacherously murdered, by ng of Mercia, and his state united of the latter. A. D. 792.

kingdom of Mercia was founded by and was ruled for some time by his son

After his death, Ceorl, his kinsman, sed to the throne by the influence of rt king of Kent, in prejudice to the rights on of Wibba; nor was it until Penda had l the age of fifty, that the death of Ceorl to him the way to the throne of his fa- ich he filled to the terror of his subjects neighbours. Segebert, Esric, and An- ee kings of East Anglia, perished suc- y in battle against him; as did also Ed- l Eswald of Northumberland: he was at lefeated and slain by Oswy, brother of ; and his crown devolved on his son who established the christian religion in

daughter of Ethelbert; and that princess, emulating the conduct of her mother Bertha, had persuaded her husband to receive the rite of baptism. The example of Edwin was rapidly followed by his subjects; and he had the satisfaction of perceiving the majority of the Northumbrians had embraced christianity, when he was summoned from the internal regulation to the defence of his kingdom. He perished with his son Osfrid, in a battle with Penda king of Mercia, and Cadwallon king of the Britons, in the 17th year of his reign.

On the death of Edwin, the kingdom of Northumberland was rent by contending princes; after an interval of ten years, it was re-united by Oswald, the son of Adelfrid, who fell like his predecessor in battle, and was succeeded by his brother Oswy. From his death, during a dark and turbulent period of above an hundred years, the throne was successively filled by Egfrid, Alfred, Ofred, Kenred, Osric, Celwulph, Eadbert, Oswolf, Mollo, Ailred, Ethelred, Celwold, Osred the second, and Ethelbert: the majority of these were the victims to the ambition of their rivals, or the seditious spirit of their subjects. After the death of Ethelbert, an universal anarchy prevailed in Northumberland, and the people having, by so many fatal revolutions, lost all attachment to their government and princes, were well prepared to receive Egbert, king of Wessex, for their sovereign.

A. D. 634.

East Anglia had been compelled by the arms of Edwin to acknowledge the authority of Earpwold, the great grandson of Uffa, the founder of the monarchy: in compliance with his protector, Earpwold, he had embraced christianity, but

was induced to renounce it by the allure-
nts of his wife. His death, like that of most
he Saxon princes, was violent; and the chris-
n religion was restored by Segebert, his suc-
sor and half brother. From the reign of Se-
ert, East Anglia presents nothing worthy of
ice, until the accession of Ethelbert, A. D.
was treacherously murdered, by 792.
a king of Mercia, and his state united
hat of the latter.

The kingdom of Mercia was founded by
da, and was ruled for some time by his son
bba. After his death, Ceorl, his kinsman,
raised to the throne by the influence of
elbert king of Kent, in prejudice to the rights
he son of Wibba; nor was it until Penda had
ined the age of fifty, that the death of Ceorl
ned to him the way to the throne of his fa-
r, which he filled to the terror of his subjects
his neighbours. Segebert, Esric, and An-
, three kings of East Anglia, perished suc-
ively in battle against him; as did also Ed-
and Eswald of Northumberland: he was at
gth defeated and slain by Oswy, brother of
wald; and his crown devolved on his son
da, who established the christian religion in
rcia. Peada died a violent death, and was
ceeded in order by Wolfhere, by Ethelred,
dred, Ceolred, and Ethelbald, whose various
ns comprise an unimportant period of about
rscore years.

Ethelbald fell in a popular sedition; and the
ne was occupied by his kinsman Offa, more
brated *for his martial* talents than his quali-
as a man. He reduced to a state of depen-
the king of Kent; and wrested from the
kin

king of Wessex the counties of Oxford and Gloucester; but the reputation he had acquired in arms was attainted by his treacherous murder of Ethelbert, king of the East Angles, whom he had invited to Hereford to celebrate his nuptials with his daughter Elfrida, amidst the festivity of the entertainments. The reduction of East Anglia was the reward of the bloody perfidy; yet Offa endeavoured to palliate his guilt, by an artful zeal for the catholic church; he made a pilgrimage to Rome, and the better to ingratiate himself with the pontiff, he engaged to support there an English college. In order to raise the income necessary, he laid the tax of a penny on each house worth thirty pence a year; this impost was afterwards levied on all England, and was commonly denominated Peter's pence; and though conferred at first as a gift, was afterwards claimed as a tribute by the holy see. Offa died, after a reign of thirty-nine years; and such was the effect of his liberality to ecclesiastics, that William of Malmesbury declares himself at a loss to determine whether his merits or his crimes preponderated. The transient reign of his son Egfrith produced nothing memorable; and his kinsman and successor Kenulph, after obtaining and abusing a victory over Egbert king of Kent, was himself killed in an insurrection of the East Angles. He left his son Kenelm a minor, who was murdered the same year by his sister Quendrade, who aimed at the government; but she was supplanted by her uncle Ceoluf, who two years after was dethroned by Beornulf. The reign of this usurper, who was not of the royal family, was short and unfortunate: he was defeated by the West Saxons,

Saxons, and killed by his own subjects. Ludican, his successor, underwent the same fate; and under the tumultuous reign of Wiglaff, the throne of Mercia was finally subverted by Egbert, who was gradually absorbing the heptarchy.

Essex was formed into a kingdom by Erkinwin, but affords scarcely any materials for history. The names of the princes who succeeded the founder, were Sleda, Sebert, Sexted, and Seward, Sigebert the Little, Sigebert the Good, Swithelm, Sigheri, Offa, Selred, Swithred, Sigeric, and Sigered. The christian religion was introduced by Sebert; was renounced by Sexted and Seward; and was re-established by Sigebert the Good; but Sigered, the last of the kings of Essex, being unable to resist the arms of Egbert, his dominions became the prey of the victor.

Sussex was the smallest kingdom of the Saxon heptarchy; and is the least known. It was founded by Ælla; and during the reign of his son Cissa became dependent on Wessex; Adelwalch, one of the successors of Cissa, was slain in battle by Cedwella king of Wessex; his sons were murdered by the conqueror, and the reduction of Sussex was the first step which the West Saxons made, towards acquiring the sole monarchy of England.

The kingdom of Wessex, which finally swallowed up all the other Saxon states, was established with difficulty. Cerdic, its founder, and his son Kenric, encountered, in many doubtful fields, the natives; and confirmed, in obstinate and bloody battles, the martial spirit of their followers. Ceaulin, the son and successor of Kenric, was still more ambitious and enterprising tha

A. D. 560. than his predecessors: he acquir of the counties of Devon and So but his invasion of his Saxon neig provoked a general confederacy, and C who had lost by his haughtiness the aff of his subjects, was expelled from his thro died in exile and misery. Cuichelme, an win, his sons, governed jointly the kingdc the expulsion of the latter, and the death former made way for Cealric, to whom s

A. D. 611. ed Ceobald, by whose death K inherited the crown. This prin braced christianity, and was suc by Kenwalch, after whose death the ki was governed by his widow Sexburga f years; and on her decease, Edwin ascen throne, but his reign was short, and his successor Kenturin inglorious; nor until the sceptre passed to Ceodwalla, t martial glory of the West Saxons r Under that prince, however, they subd kingdom of Sussex, and ravaged that of satiate of glory, Ceodwalla retired to Ror resigned his crown to Ina, who inheri military virtues of his predecessor, and to them the more valuable ones of justice, and prudence. He made war upon the in Somerset, conquered the province, an an humanity uncommon in that age, s the vanquished to retain their propert share the legal institutions of the victor long reign of thirty-seven years may be re as one of the most glorious and most pro of the heptarchy: in the decline of his made a pilgrimage to Rome, and, after turn, shut himself up in a cloister, where

By the will of Ina, his crown descended to Adelard, the brother of his consort; his pretensions were ineffectually disputed by Oswald, who boasted a more immediate descent from Cerdic, the founder of the monarchy; and on the death of Adelard, his cousin Cudred succeeded peaceably to the throne. A. D. 741. The reign of this prince was distinguished by a great victory which he obtained over the king of Mercia at Burford; but his kinsman and successor, Sigebert, neither inherited his virtues nor fortune; and being dethroned by his subjects, Cenulph was crowned in his place. Cenulph triumphed in arms over the Britons, but suffered some diminution of reputation in his expedition against Mercia: he was assassinated by Kynehard the brother of Sigebert; yet Kynehard reaped not the fruits of his crime, but fell a victim to the resentment of the West Saxons; and the vacant throne was occupied by Brithric, who was remotely allied to the house of Cerdic. A. D. 784.

The eyes of the West Saxons, however, were directed towards Egbert, a grandson of Ingild, the brother of Ina, whose early virtues promised to revive the memory of that illustrious monarch. The suspicion of Brithric was awakened by the partiality of his subjects, and Egbert fled from the jealousy of his sovereign to the court of Charlemagne. Here he studied the character and cultivated the friendship of the celebrated emperor of the West; his manners were polished, and his mind improved by the society and conversation of the French; but in exile he was not forgotten by his countrymen. The cruelty and treachery of Brithric and his consort Eadburg

burga, reverted on their own heads: a poiso
cup, which had been intended by the queen
an obnoxious noble, was fatal to Brithric, v
drank part of it, unconscious of its contents.
widow immediately took refuge in France, whe
Egbert, by the unanimous voice of his coun
men, was called to fill the throne of Wessex.

A. D. 799. In the long and bloody conflicts of Saxon princes, Egbert was the descendant left, of those who origin subdued Britain, and who enhanced their thority by claiming a pedigree from Wo the supreme divinity of their ancestors. though invited by this circumstance to inv his Saxon neighbours, he chose rather to t his arms against the Britons of Cornwall, wh he defeated in several battles; when he was called from improving his victories, in t quarter by the hostile incursion of Bernulf, k of Mercia.

Before the accession of Egbert, the Merci had very nearly attained the absolute sovereig in the heptarchy; their authority or their fluence was extended over the East Angles, the kingdoms of Kent and Essex; and they pired to the dominion of Wessex; but their reer was checked by the presence of Egb who defeated them with cruel slaughter in W shire. Kent and Essex were the prey of victor, and Bernulf, king of Mercia, himself rished in an attempt to quell a revolt of East Angles: his successor Ludican, about years after, met the same fate; when the M cians submitted to Egbert, who allowed Wi their countryman to retain the title, while himself exercised the real powers of sovereig

orthumbrians, involved in anarchy, court-
interference of a prince, whose power
estore to them some form of government.
, however, still allowed to Northumberland,
ad done to Mercia and East Anglia, the
e of electing a viceroy, but whose au-
depended on him alone.

s, about four hundred years from the
rival of the Saxons in Britain, the pru-
nd policy of Egbert united the
ms of the heptarchy; but to
ice knowledge and arts amongst
inhabitants was a more arduous task.
anity had not hitherto banished their ig-
e, or softened the ferocity of their man-
redulity and superstition had accompanied
ctrines of Rome; and the reverence to-
saints and reliques seems almost to have
ited the adoration of the Supreme Being.
ic observances were esteemed more meri-
than the active virtues; and bounty to
urch atoned for every violence against
. The sacerdotal habit was the only ob-
respect: hence the nobility preferred the
y and sloth of the cloister to the tumult
ory of war; and the kings, impoverished
continual benefactions to the church,
either able to reward valour, nor retained
ce to support their government.

A. D. 827.

ther inconvenience attended this corrupt
of christianity: the Saxons were taught
monks a profound veneration for the holy
nd the blindness and submissive disposi-
f the people encouraged the successors
Peter to advance every day in their en-
ments on the independence of the Eng-

lish church. In the eighth century, Wilfrid bishop of Lindisferne, the sole prelate of the Northumbrian kingdom, appealed to Rome against the decisions of an English synod, and thus laid the foundation of the papal pretensions which we shall find in the sequel, were carried to the most disgraceful heights, and submitted to with a patience that almost staggers belief.

CHAP. II.

From the Union of the Kingdoms of the Heptarchy under Egbert, to the Norman Conquest.

A. D. 827-838. THE flattering hopes of peace which the inhabitants of Britain had entertained, by the union of the kingdoms of the heptarchy, were soon overcast by the appearance of the Danes. The victorious arms of Charlemagne had ravaged Germany; and large bodies of the natives, to elude his arm, had retired to Jutland. From that northern extremity they retaliated on France the evils with which they had been afflicted; and the natives of Jutland, participating in their resentment, concurred in their enterprises. In their predatory excursions they were tempted to A. D. 787. visit England; and the booty they acquired allured them to frequent descents. After an unsuccessful attempt on Northumberland, they plundered the isle of Sheppey. Again they disembarked in Dorsetshire from thirty-five ships; but being encountered at Charmouth by Egbert, they were defeated in a bloody A. D. 3. battle; and though in a second invasion they were supported by the Britons of Cornwall, they were overthrown with considerable

resign to his son Athelstan
s of Essex, Kent, and Sussex. The
sensions which this partition was
inspire, was suspended by the ter-
nes, whose inroads were felt through
Suffolk, Norfolk, and Kent. In
, they swept away the goods, the
ven the wretched inhabitants; and
to their ships, set sail to some dis-
which was not prepared for their
Though often repulsed, and some-
ed, they could not be expelled; they
hemselves in the isle of Thanet and
whence they incessantly harassed
the adjacent coasts.
ese distractions, the piety of Ethel-
pelled him to make a pilgrimage to
ier he carried his fourth son Alfred.
, he married Judith, the daughter
ror Charles the Bald; but on his

and, with the same facility of disposit
only granted to the priesthood a perpet
to tithes, but exempted it from all ser
imposts.

A. D. 857. Ethelwolf lived only two ye
making this important grant
church; and by his will he divi
land between his two eldest sons, Ethel
Ethelbert; the west being assigned to
mer, the east to the latter. The reign
bald was short and licentious; and h
united the whole government in the
his brother, who, during five years,
with justice and prudence, and bequea
sceptre to his brother Ethered.

A. D. 866. The valour of Ethered was
to stem the torrent of adver
Danes ravaged East Anglia, p
into the kingdom of Northumberland, a
the city of York. Pressed in the north
red, and his younger brother Alfred,
companied him in all his martial en
the enemy directed their march towa
shire; and, after being defeated in
field, sought shelter within the walls of
Thence they infested the country ro
fought with various success the battles
and Basing. In the first the English
advantage; in the last they were var
and Ethered receiving a wound whic
mortal, transferred his kingdom and th
its defence to his brother the illustrious

A. D. 871. This prince was only tw
years of age when he asce
throne. With his father Eth
had made the pilgrimage to Rome, a

!; and in a second visit to the Roman
, Leo the Third predicted his future great-
His early education had been neglected,
e recital of some Saxon poems awakened
ive genius; and he applied himself with
ıce and success to the study of the Latin
. From these liberal pursuits, however,
early recalled by the danger of his coun-
Scarcely had he buried his brother when
obliged to take the field, in order to op-
ıe Danes. At Wilton* he gave battle to
aders, but in pursuing his advantage too
y, he was oppressed by numbers, and was
lled to relinquish the field. He was still
er formidable; and though the West
s alone followed his standard, he obliged
mies to conclude a treaty, in which they
ly swore to evacuate his territories. The
as taken and violated with equal facility;
lfred, who had confided in the sacred
tion, was surprised and routed by new
s of invaders, near Exeter. He collected
attered forces, fought eight battles in
ear, and was probably successful in most,
he compelled the Danes to sue again for
on condition of being allowed a settle-
in England, and engaging to oppose the
ce of any more of their countrymen. The
r arrival, however, of another body of
evinced their perfidy; the new invaders
oined by the old; and seizing Chippenham,
led their ravages over Wiltshire.
this unexpected event, the spirits of the

he real situation of Wilton has been disputed both
quaries and historians.

fred, whose prudence converted them fro
tal enemies into faithful friends and c
rates. He proposed to Guthrum and
lowers, to re-people the deserted parts c
Anglia and Northumberland; but he e
from them a pledge of their future sincer
stipulating that they should embrace chris
The Danes complied; and Guthrum recei
the adopted son of Alfred, the name of Atl

The success of this expedient seemed
respond with Alfred's hopes: the great
of the Danes settled peaceably in their ne
ters; the more turbulent procured sub
by ravaging the coasts of France; and
veral years England enjoyed a state o
quillity. This period Alfred employed i
lating the administration of civil and c
justice, and of providing for the future
of the island. He repaired the ruined
built castles and fortresses; and establ
regular militia. But, sensible that the
protection of an island must be a navy,
creased the shipping of his kingdom, and
his subjects to maritime conflicts. His
were stationed with such judgment as c
ally to intercept those of the Danes; a
a long time the inroads of those rapac
rates were either prevented or repelled.

At length Hastings, the celebrated
chief, having exhausted the provinces of
along the Loire and the Seine, appeared
coast of Kent with 330 sail; where the
part of the Danes disembarking, seized t
of Apuldore. Hastings himself, with a
eighty sail, entered the Thames, and
Milton in Kent: but, on the first alarm,

ships, and escaped to Mersey in Essex,
hey erected new works for their protec-
n a similar enterprise, Hastings had been
e more fortunate; and was glad to find
it Bamflete, near the island of Canvey.
these invaders, the attention of Alfred
a distracted by a new enemy. Guthrum
ired; and his followers, who had been
n Northumberland, had embraced piracy.
ere repulsed in two successive attempts,
coasts of Devon and Sussex: several of
ps were taken; and they themselves, dis-
d by the difficulties they had met with,
l to the settlements in Northumberland.
liversion which they had made, enabled
s to quit his retreat, and to recommence
ges; but while he was plundering the
ountry, his fortifications at Bamflete
rmed by the English, and his wife and
his sons were made prisoners. These
estored to the Danish chief, on the con-

them being taken, they were tried at Wincl and hanged as public robbers.

This well-timed severity restored tranq to England; not only the East Anglia Northumberland Danes, but the Welsh ac ledged the authority of Alfred. By pru by justice, and by valour, he had now estal his sovereignty over all the southern parts island, from the English Channel to the fr of Scotland; when, in the vigour of his ag the full strength of his faculties, he expired a glorious reign of twenty-nine years a half, in which he had deservedly attain appellation of GREAT, and the title of fc of the English monarchy.

The character of Alfred is almost unr in the annals of human nature; so happil all his virtues tempered together, so justl they blended, that each prevented the othe exceeding its proper boundaries. He rec the severest justice with the gentlest lenit brightest capacity and inclination for s with the most shining talents for action civil and his military virtues are almost e the objects of our admiration; and natur as if desirous that so bright a production skill should be set in the fairest light, h stowed on him every personal grace and plishment.

The martial exploits of Alfred give imperfect idea of his merit: it is chiefly discerned in his civil institutions, many of still exist. The violence and rapacity Danes had subverted all order throughou land; and to provide a remedy for th which their licentiousness had occasion

kingdom into counties: these
to hundreds, and the hundreds
en householders formed a tith-
swerable for each other's con-
whom a headborough was ap-
: every man was registered in
d none could change his habi-
certificate from the headbo-

stration of justice, the headbo-
l his tithing to assist him to
al difference which occurred
bers. In affairs of greater mo-
roversies between members of
, the cause was brought before
hich was regularly assembled
ks. In their method of decision
in of juries; twelve freeholders
o, together with the presiding
at division, were sworn to ad-
l justice in the cause submitted
on.

ourt, which met twice a year,
the freeholders of the county,
hat of the hundred, from which
ls. The bishop with the alder-
t; the latter originally possessed
nd military authority; but Al-
at this conjunction of power
e nobility dangerous, appointed
county, who was equal with the
judicial function; and whose
guard the rights of the crown
nd to levy the fines.
ustice in these courts, there lay
king in council; and in hearing

these, his time must have been entirely engro
had he not taken care to correct the corrup
or ignorance of the lower magistrates, an
instruct his nobility in letters and laws.
guide them in the administration of justice
framed a code, which, though now lost, se
long as the basis of English jurisprudence,
is generally deemed the origin of what is
denominated the common law.

To encourage learning was no less the ca
this illustrious prince. The ravages of the D
had sunk England in such barbarism, that
fred, on his accession, knew not one person s
of the Thames, who could so much as inte
the Latin service; and very few even in
northern parts who had reached that pitc
erudition. To supply this defect, he invite
most celebrated scholars from all parts of Eur
he established schools, and founded, or at
revived, the university of Oxford. But the
effectual expedient was his own example
usually divided his time into three equal
tions; one was employed in exercise, or the r
tion of the body; another in the dispatch of
siness; and a third in study and devotion.
sible of the incapacity of his people for spe
tive pursuits, he conveyed his morality by
logues, parables, stories, and apophthegms cc
ed in poetry: he translated the Fables of Æ
the histories of Orosius and Beda, and Boe
on the consolation of philosophy;* nor di
deem it derogatory from his high charact
sovereign, legislator, warrior, and politician,
to lead the way in literary studies.

* According to a manuscript in the Cottonian librar
work was translated while he resided at Woodstock.

; and such was the impression of his saga-
nd virtue, that not only his subjects, but
ners, regarded him as one of the greatest
s who had appeared on the theatre of the

the two surviving sons of Alfred by A. D.
fe Ethelswitha, the daughter of a 901.
an earl, Ethelwald the younger in-
d his [illegible]assion for letters, and lived
[illegible]dward the elder succeeded
[illegible] as well as the throne of
[illegible]d his authority in arms
[illegible]ns of his cousin-german
[illegible]elbert, who was the elder
[illegible]d in an [illegible]r Bury, the
[illegible]ed by [illegible]f the pre-

[illegible]d from Edward
[illegible] of tran-
[illegible] was [illegible] success-
[illegible] [illegible]ans, the

worthy of it. He crushed Alfred, a p
nobleman, who had conspired against
penetrated into Scotland, and extorted
mission of Constantine its king; he re
obedience the turbulent Northumbria
defeated with considerable slaughter, th
and Welsh. Nor was he inattentive to t
nal regulations of his kingdom; and
which he enacted, that a merchant w
made three sea voyages of any length
own account, should be admitted to the
a thane or gentleman, is a proof of ju
soaring above the prejudices of the a
died at Glocester, after a reign of sixte
and was succeeded by Edmund his le
brother.

A. D. 941. The reign of Edmund was sh
his death violent: he chastised th
umbrians who had risen again
he conquered Cumberland from the Bri
conferred it on Malcolm king of Scot
condition that he should do him homag
but he perished by the hand of Leolf,
ous robber, whom he had sentenced to
ment, but who presumed to enter the roy
ment. The king commanded him t
Leolf refused to obey; and Edmund, i
choleric, seized him by the hair, when
fian gave him a mortal wound with a d

A. D. 946. Edred, the brother and succ
Edmund, employed the first mo
his accession in reducing to obedi
Northumbrian Danes, and in compelli
colm king of Scotland to renew his hor
the lands he held in England. Tho
destitute of courage, he was an abject

sup

solute ascendancy over Edred, and was
l at the head of the treasury. The auste-
hich had contributed to his advancement
alously promoted; and the celibacy of
s becoming a favourite topic at Rome, the
undertook to make all the clergy in the
rn world renounce the privilege of marri-

In England he was seconded with ardour
unstan, who introduced the reformation
he convents of Glastonbury and Abingdon;
ie secular clergy were not inclined tamely
rt with the privileges they had enjoyed;
hile the minds of the people were violently
ed by these religious controversies, Edred
ted this life.

c children of Edred were too young A. D.
ar the weight of government, and 955.
ore the throne was filled by his ne-
Edwy; whose graceful person had prepos-
l his subjects in his favour; but he had

with every opprobrious epithet that could applied to the sex, thrust the queen from royal consort. To avenge this insult, E accused Dunstan of malversation in the treas and banished him the kingdom. But during absence, his party proceeded to more outrag acts of violence. Archbishop Odo, with a l of soldiers, seized the queen, burned her with an hot iron, and forcibly carried her Ireland. Edwy, incapable of resisting, was liged to acquiesce in a divorce; and the unha Elgiva, attempting to return to the arms of husband, was seized by the infernal Odo, with the malice of a demon, caused her t hamstrung, of which she expired a few after at Glocester, in the sharpest torments.

Not yet satiated with this horrible venge the monks encouraged Edgar, the younger ther of Edwy, to aspire to the throne; and put him in possession of Mercia, Northum land, and East Anglia. Dunstan returne England, to support him with his influence, was installed in the see of Canterbury. unhappy Edwy was excommunicated; but death, which happened soon after, delivered from monkish persecution, and gave E peaceable possession of the throne.

A. D. 959. The capacity of Edgar was displ in the fortune of his reign; by his v rous preparations for war, he enfo peace; and awed equally the foreign and mestic Danes. The neighbouring soverei the king of Scotland, the princes of Wale the Isle of Man, of the Orknies, and of Irel were reduced to pay him submission; but chief means by which he preserved internal t

quil

and a great prince, but as a man of
e, and even a saint. Chastity, how-
not be reckoned among his quali-
broke into a convent, carried off by
violated Editha, a nun; yet the only
t which the grateful Dunstan imposed
me, was, that he should abstain from
s crown for seven years. At Ando-
dgar, struck with the beauty of the
f a nobleman, in whose house he lodg-
moniously demanded of the mother
ung lady might be allowed to pass
night with him. The mother, well
with his impetuosity, thought it
easier to deceive than to argue: she
irected a waiting-maid named Elfiede
o the king's bed, after the company
to rest. The dawn of light revealed
ure; but Edgar, well pleased with his
, was far from resenting the fraud;

vanquished by the beauty of Elfrida; and w
he returned to his master, he assured him, t
Elfrida possessed no charms of superior lus
He however remarked, that she would be on
whole an advantageous match for him,
might by her birth and riches make him suf
ent compensation for her homeliness. Ed
pleased to establish his favourite's fortune,
warded his success by a recommendation to
parents of Elfrida, whose hand Athelwold s
obtained.

Envy, which ever pursues the favourite
a king, speedily informed Edgar of the tr
Before he avenged, however, the treachery
Athelwold, he resolved to satisfy himself of
guilt. He told him he intended to visit his
tle, and to be introduced to his wife; on wh
the favourite, incapable of refusing the hono
revealed the whole transaction to Elfrida,
conjured her to disguise that beauty which
seduced him from his fidelity. But the amb
ous fair, exasperated at an artifice which
defrauded her of a crown, appeared before
gar in all her charms, and kindled in his bos
at once the passions of desire and revenge:
repressed, however, his emotions, until he
an opportunity, in hunting, of stabbing Ath
wold, and soon after reaped the harvest of
guilt, by marrying his widow.

A. D. 975. The reign of Edgar lasted sixteen yea
and he was succeeded by Edward, wh
he had by his first marriage with
daughter of earl Ordmer. This prince w
anointed and crowned by Dunstan at Kingst
and lived four years after his accession.
death alone was memorable and tragical: thou

at she had long wished for. After re-
ing his horse, he desired some liquor to
ight him; and while he was holding the
his mouth, a servant of Elfrida approach-
. stabbed him behind. The prince set spurs
iorse, but faint with the loss of blood, he
m the saddle, and his foot being entan-
. the stirrup, he was dragged along until
red. His youth and innocence procured
e title of Martyr; and the son of Elfrida
the advantage of his mother's crime.

the age of eleven, Ethelred was A. D.
on the throne of England; his reign 978.
ig and inglorious: the surname of
ly was the reproachful epithet of his
ess. The Danes resumed their ravages;
iglish were betrayed by the cowardice or
city of their leaders; and the force which
en created by the genius of Alfred, dis-
under the feeble administration of Ethel-

gance of the northern invaders. Sensil superiority of these hardy warriors, it the custom of Athelstan and Edgar to their pay, bodies of Danish troops. T cenaries, by their arts and valour, had themselves so agreeable to the fair sex, debauched the wives and daughters of lish; but what most provoked the ir was, that instead of defending them a vaders, they were ever ready to join th foe. This animosity inspired Ethelred resolution of massacring the Danes th his dominions. Secret orders were d to commence the execution every whe

A. D. 1002. Nov. 20. same day; and so well were th executed, that the rage of lace, sanctioned by authority distinction between innocence and spared neither sex nor age.

A. D. 1003. This barbarous policy, howev long remain unrevenged. Sv his Danes, who wanted but a for invading England, appeared off th coast, when earl Hugh, a Norman, a nor of Exeter, betrayed that city into th thence they extended their devastatio sight of the walls of London. The cal the English were augmented by famine consented to purchase a nominal peac payment of thirty thousand pounds. T received the money without discontin ravages: a second peace, which they s price of forty-eight thousand pounds, observed; and new contributions cor be extorted. The English nobility, despair, swore allegiance to Sweyn,

before he was informed of the 1014.
Sweyn; when the English pre-
nobles invited him to resume the royal
r. But on his return they soon disco-
iat adversity had not corrected his er-
displayed the same incapacity, indo-
wardice, and credulity. Canute, the
successor of Sweyn, and no less terrible
; father, after ravaging the eastern
id burst into the counties of Dorset,
id Somerset. He was opposed by Ed-
ie eldest son of Ethelred; but the Eng-
iers demanded the presence of their
; and being disappointed in that hope,
dually retired from the camp. Edmond,
able to keep the field, set out for Lon-
ich he found in confusion, from the
he king, who had expired, after a reign
five years. He left two sons by his
iage, Edmond who succeeded him, and
o was murdered by Canute; and two

perfidy of Edric duke of Mercia. He was, h
ever, still formidable: and at Glocester prep
again to dispute the field, when the Danish
English nobility, equally harassed, obliged t
kings to submit to a compromise, and to n
a partition of the kingdom. Canute reserve
himself the northern part, and relinquished
southern to Edmond. This prince survivec
treaty about a month; he was murdered at
ford by two of his chamberlains, accomplic
Edric, who thereby made way for the succes
of Canute the Dane, to the crown of Englan

A. D. 1017. Canute immediately resolved to advantage of the feeble years of Ec and Edward, the infant sons of Edm

To cover, however, his injustice under plau
pretences, before he seized their dominions
summoned a general assembly of the state
order to fix the succession of the kingdom.
here suborned some nobles to depose, that ir
treaty of Glocester, it had been verbally agr
in case of Edmond's death, to name Canute
cessor to his dominions, or tutor to his child
and this evidence, supported by the powe
Canute, determined the states to vest in him
government of the kingdom. Jealous, howe
of the two princes, he sent them abroad t
ally the king of Sweden, whom he desired to
him by their death from all future anxiety.
Swede, too humane to comply with the c
request, conveyed them to Solomon king
Hungary. The elder died without issue;
Edward the younger married Agatha, the si
in-law of Solomon, and daughter of the emp
Henry the IId. by whom he had Edgar A
ling, Margaret, afterwards queen of Scotl

made no distinction between the
English; he restored the Saxon cus-
gradually incorporated the victors
nquished. Though the distance of
of Edmond seemed to secure him
nterprises, he dreaded the preten-
ed and Edward, who were supported
le Richard duke of Normandy. To
riendship of that prince, he paid his
his sister Emma; and the widow
consented to bestow her hand on the
enemy of her former husband, on
at the children of their marriage
it the English throne.
ter repelling the attacks of the king
invaded and subdued the kingdom
At leisure from war, however, he
w towards that future existence,
o natural for the human mind, whe-
l by prosperity, or disgusted with
make the object of its attention.

while the tide was rising; and as the waters proached, he commanded them to retire, an obey the voice of him who was lord of the oc But when the sea, still advancing towards h began to wet his feet, he turned to his courti and remarked to them, that every creatur the universe was feeble and impotent, compa to that Almighty Being in whose hands were the elements of nature, and who could sa the ocean, "Thus far shalt thou go, and farther."

The last remarkable action of Canute, was expedition against Malcolm king of Scotla The latter had refused to acknowledge him a vassal for Cumberland to the crown of E land; but his obstinacy yielded to the app ance of Canute on his frontiers at the head formidable army; and his grandson and Malcolm, to whom he relinquished Cumberl submitted to the ceremony of homage.

Four years after this enterprise, Canute pired at Shaftsbury. He had given his daug in marriage to the English earl Godwin, had served him with great ability in his with Sweden. Of his two sons by his first m riage, Sweyn had been crowned king of Norw and Harold seized the throne of England; w Hardicanute, who was his issue by Emma, left in possession of the kingdom of Denmarl

A. D. 1035. Though Harold founded his clain the English throne on the will of his ther, who was unwilling to leave a ne conquered kingdom in the hands of so youn

* The scene of this memorable event, is said to been the beach at Southampton.

pr

r prevented by a compromise; and
l that Harold should enjoy, together
n, all the provinces north of the
ile the possession of the south should
Hardicanute; and till that prince
to take possession of his dominions,
mma established her authority over
re of the partition at Winchester.
owever, was not freed by this treaty
ıd of competitors: the duke of Nor-
a minor; and Alfred and Edward,
mma by Ethelred, had crossed the
ieir mother at Winchester. Thence
ıvited by Harold to London; when,
ation of the tyrant, the unfortunate
tacked near Guildford, had his eyes
died soon after. Alarmed at his
l and Emma fled to Normandy and
nd Harold seized the dominions
ten assigned to his brother. Provi-

mediately set sail for London, where
received in triumph, and acknowledge
without opposition. To justify himsel
participating in the crime of Harold, he
into England, and entertained with
prince Edward; yet when the latter pr
an accusation against Godwin as the acc
in the murder of his brother Alfred, th
influenced by a splendid bribe, suffered th
ed to vindicate himself by his single oath

Hardicanute did not long retain the af
of the English; he revived the tax of D
which consisted of a shilling on every
land. In several parts of England, espec
Worcester, the inhabitants resisted this
tax: they were, however, obliged to subm
were only delivered by the intemperance
oppressor from the dread of his vengeanc
the nuptials of a Danish lord, which he
noured with his presence, Hardicanute e
and this event once more presented to th
lish, a favourable opportunity of shaking
Danish yoke.

A. D. 1041. The descendants of Edmond Ir
the legitimate heirs to the crown,
a distance in Hungary; and as al
might be dangerous, the vacant throne
fered to Edward, the son of Ethelred and
His elevation might have been opposed b
win, whose extensive influence in Wesse
dered him not more formidable than his
rous alliances and tried abilities: he co
forget that Edward had accused him of tl
der of Alfred; but he was prevailed on
aside his resentment, on condition that the
should promise to marry his daughter

is severity towards his mother the queen
ger was more injurious to his reputation.
:cused her of neglecting him and his bro-
luring their adverse fortune; and, stripping
her treasures, confined her in a monastery
inchester.

e long residence of Edward in Normandy,
ttached him to the manners and language
e natives; who repaired to his court in
ers, and were received with favour. Their
nce soon grew disgusting to the English;
bove all, it excited the jealousy of God-
That powerful nobleman, besides being
r duke of Wessex, had the counties of
and Sussex annexed to his government:
lest son Sweyn possessed the same autho-
the counties of Oxford, Berks, Glocester,
Hereford; and Harold, his second son, was
of East Anglia, and at the same time go-
r of Essex. His late reconciliation with
rd was forgotten in fresh injuries: the

The influence of the Normans, however the popular pretence for the disaffection o duke of Wessex. The insolence of one o attendants of Stephen, count of Bologne, provoked a tumult at Dover, from whic count himself with difficulty escaped. He plained to Edward; and Godwin, in who vernment Dover lay, was ordered by the ki repair thither, and punish the inhabitants. refused obedience; threw the blame of th on the count of Bologne; and under prete repressing some disorders on the Welsh fro assembled an army, and pressed forward to the king at Glocester. While Edward aff to negotiate, he solicited the assistance o ward, duke of Northumberland, and Le duke of Mercia, two powerful noblemen, je of Godwin's greatness. These hastened their followers to protect their sovereign; marching to London, summoned a coun judge of the rebellion of Godwin and his Godwin demanded hostages for his safety these were refused: and finding himself, the desertion of his troops, incapable of pr resistance, he fled to Flanders, while hi Harold repaired to Ireland.

Though an exile, Godwin was supporte numerous alliances, foreign and domestic. earl of Flanders permitted him to prepare a in his harbours, with which he sailed for land; and having possessed himself of the of Wight, he was there joined by Harold w considerable squadron, which that nobl had collected in Ireland. He now entere Thames, appeared before London, and claimed, that his only object was to obtai

f and his family, and to rescue
n the tyranny of foreigners. Ed-
ged to hearken to terms of ac-
a new reconciliation took place;
obnoxious of the Normans were

ath, which happened soon after,
itting at table with the king, de-
ernment of Wessex, Sussex, Kent,
th his office of steward of the
his son Harold, who was actu-
bition equal to that of his father,
ior to him in virtue and address.
and gentle demeanor, he softened
Edward, and gained every day
by his bounty and affability; by
dger, duke of Mercia, and of Si-
f Northumberland, he was deli-
o powerful rivals; and to the go-
he latter, his brother Tosti suc-

eling the approach of age and in-
aving no issue himself, began to
nting a successor to his kingdom.
m Hungary his nephew Edward,
ining heir of the Saxon line; but
pired, soon after his arrival with
The youth and inexperience of
Atheling, diverted from him the
dward, who at last fixed his choice
n, William of Normandy.
ated prince was natural son of
f Normandy, by Harlotta, daugh-
r in Falaise. The illegitimacy of
not prevented him from being
by the Normans as their duke;

and his qualities in the field and the cabinet soo
became the admiration of his friends, and th
terror of his enemies. He had scarcely esta
blished tranquillity in his own dominions befor
he visited England; where he was received in
manner suitable to the reputation he had acqui
ed, and the obligations which Edward owed t
his family. On his return he was secretly in
formed of the intention of the king to adopt hi
as his successor; and though Edward, fickle an
irresolute, afterwards invited the descendants o
his brother from Hungary, the death of hi
nephew, and the inexperience of young Edga
made him secretly resume his resolution in fa
vour of William. Meanwhile Harold rapidly in
creased in power and popularity; but in his view
on the throne he was embarrassed by his appre
hensions for some hostages whom Godwin ha
given for his good behaviour, and who ha
been sent into Normandy. Having obtained th
king's consent for their release, and ignorant
that William was his competitor, he immediatel
proceeded with a numerous train on his journe
to Normany in order to reclaim them. A tem
pest drove him on the territory of Guy, coun
of Ponthieu, who detained him as his prisone
Harold, however, found means to acquaint th
duke of Normandy with his situation; and Wi
liam immediately perceiving the importance o
gaining Harold, demanded his liberty of Guy
who delivered the earl into the hands of his riva
William received him with every demonstratio
of respect; and taking an opportunity of disclo
ing to him the secret of his pretensions to th
crown of England, desired his assistance; an
offered him one of his daughters in marriage, a
a pledg

en Harold found himself at liberty, his
on revived: he continued therefore still
rt popularity, and to inflame the hatred
English to the Normans; and fortune
this time threw two incidents in his way,
served to increase the reputation he had
y attained.
ith, prince of Wales, had, by his incur-
n the western borders, rendered his name
e to the English. To suppress this dan-
enemy, Harold marched against him in
; and penetrating amidst their mountains,
d the Welsh to such distress, that to avert
otal destruction, they sacrificed their
, and submitted to the will of the victor.
other incident was still more honourable
rold; Tosti his brother had oppressed
mberland in such a manner that the in-
nts had risen in arms, under Morcar and
, grandsons to the duke of Mercia. Ha-

This match convinced William, that he co
no longer depend on Harold, who now ope
aspired to the succession; while Edward, fe
and irresolute, was afraid to declare either
or against him. In this state of uncertai
he was surprised by death, in the sixty-fifth y
of his age, and the twenty-fifth of his reign.

A. D. 1066. On the death of Edward, the las
the Saxon princes, Harold ascended
throne with little difficulty. The E
lish, prepossessed in his favour, exhibited in
elevation the most unequivocal marks of ap
bation; but the duke of Normandy received
intelligence with open indignation. He sent
embassy to England upbraiding him with
breach of faith, and summoning him to re
the possession of the kingdom. Harold rep
to the Norman ambassadors, that the oath
had taken was void, as being extorted by
lence; that he had obtained the crown from
unanimous suffrages of the people; and th
the duke made any attempts by force of a
he was determined that the same moment sh
put a period to his life and his government.

William, undaunted by this answer, bega
reflect that England having enjoyed tranqui
for near fifty years, her inhabitants were unu
to arms; that her towns were without forti
tions; and that his rival was yet scarcely e
blished on the throne: while, on the contrary,
Normans were at the highest pitch of mili
glory; that they were impatient of peace
repose, and eager to embark in any enterp
however daring.

* Edward was the first king of England who pretend
cure the king's evil by his touch; a practice which
continued till the Hanover succession.

...; the counts of Anjou and
...couraged their vassals to engage in
...ion; while the emperor Henry the
...ised to guarantee his Norman domi-
...; his expedition.

...at superstitious age, the most im-
...that William gained, was the Ro-
...Alexander II, who, in consequence
...e of Normandy's application, pro-
...rold a perjured usurper; and sanc-
...retensions of William, by the pre-
...secrated banner, and a ring which
... of St. Peter's hairs.

...3000 vessels was speedily assembled
... of Normandy, to transport an army
...en, which he had selected from the
...o courted his service. Among these
...he high names of the most illustrious
...Normandy, France, Brittany, and
...o whom William held up the spoils
...as the prize of their valour.

which consisted of three hundred vessels; defeated Morcar, earl of Northumberland, Edwin earl of Mercia, who had venture give him battle.

Harold was no sooner apprised of the da than he rapidly advanced to encounter th vaders; and at Standford he engaged the my. His victory was decisive; both Helf and Tosti perished in the action; and the No gian fleet fell into the hands of the conquer

Scarcely had he time, however, to rejoi his success, before he was informed that the of Normandy was landed with a great arm the south of England. Misled by uncertai mours that William had laid aside his pro tions, Harold had dismissed his fleet, and Normans, without meeting any obstacle, la at Pevensey in Sussex. The duke himsel he leaped on shore, happened to stumble, fell; but had the presence of mind to turn omen to his advantage, by calling aloud, he had now taken possession of the country.

The victory which Harold had obtaine Standford, may be regarded as the imme cause of his ruin: he had lost in the action m of his best officers, and bravest soldiers; an

only the dictates of his
ll his remonstrances; and
soon appeared in sight
d pitched their camp at
it did he seem of success
Villiam was a sum of mo-
he kingdom; the duke of
quired him to resign the
him in fealty, or to sub-
ope, or to the chance of
the god of battle should
all their differences, was
ld.

iately prepared A. D.
nglish spent the 1066.
riot and jollity; Oct. 14.
occupied in the
the morning the duke cal-
pal officers; and in a set
every argument which
courage and repel their
ed the signal of battle to
le army, moving at once,
or song of Roland, ad-
with alacrity towards the

he advantage of a rising
secured his flanks with
stand upon the defensive,
gement with the cavalry,
rior. The Kentish men
, a post of honour which
as their due. The Lon-
standard; and the king
by his two valiant bro-
ofwin, dismounting from
his

or to die. The first attack of the Normans desperate, but was received with equal va by the English; and the former began to ret when William hastened to their support wi select band. His presence restored the ac and the English in their turn were oblige retire. They rallied again, however, assi by the advantage of the ground; and Will in order to gain the victory, had recourse stratagem which, had it failed, must have en in his total ruin. He commanded his troo allure the enemy from their position, by the pearance of flight. The English followed precipitation: the Normans faced upon the the plain, and drove them back with con rable slaughter. The artifice was a second repeated with the same success; yet a great b of the English still maintained themselves in array, and seemed determined to dispute victory. While they were galled by the Nor archers behind, they were attacked by the h armed infantry in front; and Harold him was slain by an arrow, as he combated with g bravery at the head of his men. His two thers shared the same fate. The English, dis raged by the fall of their princes, fled o sides; and the darkness of the night contrib to save those who had survived the carnag the battle.

The obstinacy, indeed, with which the E lish had maintained the conflict from mor to sunset, is proved by the loss of the vict fifteen thousand Normans fell; and Willia the action had three horses killed under

, however dearly purchased, was
aid the price of a kingdom. The
d was brought to William, who
tored it without ransom to his
o sooner had the Normans re-
to heaven for their success, than
ssed forwards, to secure the prize

CHAP. III.

The Reigns of William the Conqueror, William Henry I. and Stephen.

A. D. 1006. IN the disastrous field of Hastin strength of England had been b and the death of the king, wi slaughter of his bravest warriors, hac whelmed the nation with dismay. Edgar ling, the only heir of the Saxon line, ha considered as unfit to govern, even in ti order and tranquillity; and though the earls, Edwin and Morcar, who fled wi remains of the vanquished army to Londc caused him to be proclaimed, they soon it was impossible to arm the people support.

After possessing himself of Dover, V rapidly advanced towards the capital to in his victory; his enterprise avowed and ha by the pope, was insisted on as a reas general submission; and the repulse w body of Londoners received from five hi Norman horse renewed the terror of th zens. Edgar and Morcar had retired wit troops into their own provinces; and the seeing no other alternative, unanimously ed themselves to yield to the conqueror. William, however, came in sight of L all the chief nobility, and Edgar Athelin self, entered his camp, and requested h mount the throne, declaring, as they h ways been ruled by regal power, they des

n. In Westminster Abbey he was con-
by Aldred, archbishop of York. The
siderable of the nobility, both English
man, attended him on this occasion;
gh Edwin and Morcar were not present
eremony, they soon after submitted,
alty to their new sovereign, and were
d in the possession of their estates and

by a pretended destination of king Ed-
r the sanction of the pope, by an irre-
ction of the people, but still more by
rms, William seated himself on the Eng-
ne.* He gratified his followers by the

---

e time of the Norman conquest, the Saxon laws
ge had supplanted thos: of the Britons, and all
ions of England partook of their German origi-
inhabitants breathed a fierce spirit of indepen-
l the king was regarded as little more than the
the citizens. The law of hereditary succession

distribution of the treasures of Harold; and the most liberal donations to churches and nasteries, he expressed his gratitude to the ecc siastical order, who, influenced by the pope, h embraced his party with zeal. He introduc into England that strict execution of justice, which his administration had been celebrated Normandy; he restrained by severe discipl

---

the judges, and principal proprietors of lands. What fluence the boroughs might have at this period is li known, nor has it been ascertained whether they were lowed representatives in their corporate capacity.

But with every check that had hitherto been devised is necessary to suppose, that oppression and violence m have prevailed among a martial and turbulent people. reign of the laws was not yet sufficiently established to ens justice; and therefore the weak and the defenceless ge rally sought security by devoting themselves to the ser of some chieftain, or the clientship of some particular ble. Others again, in the middle ranks of life, united confederacies for their mutual protection, and thus want of strength in the civil union was supplied by pri engagements.

The Anglo Saxons may be considered as constitu three ranks of men: the nobles, the free, and the sla The nobles were called thanes, and were divided into king's thanes and the lesser thanes. Noble birth and tensive possessions were long necessary to give the ran thane; but two statutes of Athelstan seem to have b made on purpose to stimulate the ambition of risin this envied distinction. The first decreed that any r chant who made three voyages on his own account, sh be entitled to the quality of thane; the second confe this honour on any husbandman, who had been abl purchase five hides of land, and had a chapel, a kitchen hall, and a bell.

Untitled freemen were denominated Ceorles among Saxons. These were chiefly employed in husbandry. cultivated the farms of the nobility, either for hire, certain rent.

dst this apparent confidence, he built in London, Winchester, Hereford, Ox-

---

e most numerous ranks, however, in the com-
ere the *villains* or slaves, who were the property
ds, and consequently incapable of holding any
themselves. To meliorate the unhappy condi-
se men, several humane regulations were esta-
a lord beat out his slave's eyes or teeth, that slave
is liberty; and if he killed him, he was amerced
the king.
it lords and abbots possessed a criminal jurisdic-
their territories, and could punish or protect
peal. This apparently irregular and dangerous
is some measure restrained by the established
ion of justice, by the courts of decennary, the
and the county. In the Anglo Saxon courts, the
s allowed to clear himself by his own oath, and
ring oaths of his friends. These were called
ors, and sometimes amounted to three hundred.
ices also of single combat, and of the ordeal,
ed in doubtful cases; and absurd as they may
e result was deemed complete evidence, for or

ford, and the towns best situated for commai
ing the kingdom, and trusted to the sword rat
than to a submission which he knew to be c
strained.

By this mixture of vigour and lenity, he h
so soothed or humbled the minds of the Engli
that he thought he might safely revisit his
tive country, and enjoy the congratulations
his ancient subjects. Accordingly he set
for Normandy, leaving the administration in

The Saxon pound, as likewise that which was coined
some centuries after the conquest, was near three times
weight of our present money. There were forty-e
shillings in the pound, and a Saxon shilling was near
fifth heavier than ours. By the laws of Athelstan, a sh
was valued at a shilling or fifteen pence of our money:
ox was computed at six times the value of a sheep; a
cow at four. A horse was valued at thirty-six shilling
our money, and a mare at twenty-four. Between the y
900 and 1000, a hide of land was purchased for about
hundred and eighteen shillings, which is little more tha
shilling per acre. On the whole, when we combine
alteration in the weight of the pound, and in the mod
value of the precious metals from their greater plenty,
may conceive every sum of money mentioned by histori
during the Anglo Saxon, and even the Norman times,
if it were multiplied more than an hundred fold abo
sum of the same denomination at present.

The royal revenue seems to have arisen from large
mesnes, from tolls and imposts, fines and forfeitures. Th
was likewise a tax of one shilling on every hide of land
led Danegelt, which appears to have been levied for
defence of the kingdom against the Danish marauders.

In addition to this, it was usual for every five hide
land to equip a man for the service; and as there were c
puted to be 243,600 hides of land in England, the ordi
military force of the kingdom consisted of 48,720 m
though no doubt this was doubled on extraordinary er
gencies.

ha

is uterine brother Odo, bishop of
of William Fitz-Osborne; and, that
ity might be less exposed to danger,
ver with him the chief of the Eng-
who, while they served to grace his
ir magnificence, were in reality hos-
fidelity of the nation.
e absence of William, affairs took a
urable turn in England. It is pro-
lormans, despising a people who had
bmitted to the yoke, and envying
were desirous of provoking them
Be this as it may, their arrogance
ultiplied discontents and complaints
; and secret conspiracies were en-
gainst the government. The inha-
ent, who had first submitted to the
were the first that attempted to throw
and, encouraged by Eustace count
, who had been also disgusted by the
nade an unsuccessful attempt on
ric, the forester, whose possessions
anks of the Severn, provoked at the
s of some Norman captains in his
od, formed an alliance with Ble-
owallen, two Welsh princes, and
l to repel force by force. The dis-
the English daily increased; a secret
entertained to perpetuate a massacre
ans, like that which had been for-
ted upon the Danes; and the ani-
me so general and natural, that the
rl Coxo having desired him to head
insurrection, and finding him reso-
taining his fidelity to William, put
, as a traitor to his country.

The return of the king, however, disc
the plans of the conspirators; and the
tion of their estates still farther enri
Normans. Though highly irritated ag
English, William still preserved the ap
of justice in his oppressions; he restore
inheritance such as had been arbitrarily
during his absence; but he seized this
nity of imposing the tax of Danegelt o
ple, under pretence of being thereby l
to defend them.

This tax rendered his government
ous: the inhabitants of Exeter rose i
people of Devonshire and Cornwa
their example; but Exeter was terrif
mission by the presence of William
citadel was erected to restrain in
levity; and Devonshire and Corn
plored the clemency of the sover
new and more formidable insurr
north excited the general attentio
important cons

towed on his Norman adhe-
f their followers; and the nu-
of foreigners, which he esta-
th, left the Saxons in that quar-
y real power.

ow clearly foresaw that the
ed to rely on the support and
ners, and that new forfeitures
lt of every attempt to support
ressed with this dismal pros-
nto foreign countries: Edgar
dreading the insidious cares-
caped with his sisters Marga-
into Scotland. A few, how-
o acquire security from arms:
in Ireland, Godwin, Edmond,
e sons of Harold, passed into
ded in Devonshire; but were
ged to return, by Brien son of
ny. In the north, the inha-
nberland and York threw off
nd killed their foreign gover-
gents were strengthened by a
ces from Denmark, and were
presence of Edgar Atheling,
land to place himself at their
, a nobleman of East Anglia,
valour, assembled his follow-
elter in the Isle of Ely, made
n the neighbouring country;
forester, calling in the assist-
, laid siege to Shrewsbury.

Scotland espoused Margaret, and
mes VI. to the English throne, the
d.

This general commotion was however hus by the policy and vigour of William, who flamed his followers by the promise of new fo tures, purchased the retreat of the Danes, reduced to obedience Northumberland and Y Edgar Atheling again sought refuge in S land; Edric implored the clemency of the queror, and was once more received into fav and Hereward alone, confiding in the ad tages of his situation, scorned to make a mission.

Though William still preserved the langu of clemency and forgiveness towards the ch his heart was hardened against the people. chastise the turbulence of the Northumbri he laid waste that fertile country between Humber and the Tees, and the lives of an dred thousand persons are computed to l been sacrificed, by this barbarous stroke of licy. Taking advantage of the imprudence which the bulk of the landed property had gaged in these insurrections, he involved the prietors in confiscation: their estates were t ferred to the Normans; and the most ancient honourable English families were reduce beggary; while every path which led to r or preferment was carefully shut against th

The feudal law, which had some time established in Normandy and France, Wil introduced into England. He divided, very few exceptions, besides the royal deme the lands of that country into baronies; conferred them, with the reservation of s services and payments, on the most consi ble of his adventurers. These barons made g of a great part of their lands to other foreig

ıeir landed property, were glad to be
ıto the second, under the protection of
erful Norman.
:trine which exalted the papacy above
power, had gradually diffused itself
ıe; but at this time, was more preva-
southern, than in the northern king-
Europe. Pope Alexander, who had
'illiam in his conquests, naturally ex-
ıt he would extend to England the
for this sacred character, and break
ıal independence of the Saxons. As
efore, as the Norman prince was es-
on the throne, Alexander dispatched
menfroy, bishop of Sion, as his legate:
ing, though he was probably led by
o pay respect to Rome, embraced the
'y to degrade those English prelates,
obnoxious to him. In a council of
ıal ecclesiastics, he deposed every ma-

ledging any one for pope whom he himself l
not previously received; nor would he su
any letters or bills from Rome to be produ
without the sanction of his authority. But
was still more vigilant to humble the Engli
he even formed a project of extinguishing
English language; and ordered that in all sch
youth should be instructed in the French tong
and that all law proceedings should be direc
in the same idiom; whence arises that mixtur
French which is at present found in the Eng
tongue, and particularly in legal forms.

The situation of the two great earls Ed
and Morcar became daily more disagreeal
Sensible that they had entirely lost their dign
they determined to attempt its recovery by fo
While Edwin retired to his estate in the no
with a view of commencing an insurrecti
Morcar took shelter in Ely with the brave H
ward. To subdue that Isle, William surrou
ed it with flat-bottomed boats, and made a ca
way through the morasses to the extent of
miles. The rebels surrendered at discreti
Hereward alone forced his way sword in h
through the enemy, and continued his hostili
at sea, till William, admiring his bravery,
ceived him into favour. Morcar was thr
into prison; Edwin was killed in attemptin
escape; and Edgar Atheling, weary of a fugi
life, submitted to the conqueror, and obtai
a decent pension for life, with the libert
residing in England.

A. D. 1073. Scarcely, however, had William set
the insurrections of the native lords, w
some of the most powerful Norman
rons associated in arms, provoked by the

f their master. Of these the chief were
arl of Hereford, and Ralph de Gueder
Norfolk; and earl Waltheof, the last of
lish who for some generations possessed
er, and who had married Judith the
William, rashly joined in the league;
eflection, dreaded the effects of the en-
in which he was engaged. Distracted
olute, he imparted the project and his
o his wife Judith, who having conceived
re passion for another, conveyed in ex-
d terms the particulars of the conspiracy
ncle.

eof, in the mean time, had made a full
n of the secret to Lanfranc, archbishop of
ury, who urged him to make atonement
uilt, by acknowledging it. He accord-
ssed over to Normandy, and laid open
le design to the king. The conspirators,
d of his departure, immediately flew to
ut before the arrival of the Danes, on
ssistance they had depended, they were
and dispersed. The earl of Norfolk
n despair to Brittany, where he possessed
erable estate: the property of the earl of
d was forfeited, and he himself impri-
rring life. Waltheof obtained not the
ie had been promised, and which his re-
merited; for William, instigated by the
al Judith, ordered him to be tried, con-
, and executed; and the English, who
ed him as the last resource of their na-
t only lamented his fate, but fancied
were wrought by his reliques.

apal see at this time began to extend its
ments; and even the haughty and po-
tent

tent William was required to perform hon and remit the tribute that was due to the of Christ. By the tribute was meant P pence, which though at first a voluntary tion of the Saxon princes, had been con into a badge of subjection. William re that the money should be remitted as usua neither had he promised to do homage to I nor was it in the least his purpose to impos servitude on his state.

From ecclesiastical affairs however, his tion was recalled to civil. His eldest son bert, greedy of fame, impatient of contrad and without reserve in his friendships or ties, had been flattered with the hope, th father, in possession of England, would to him the independent administration of minions on the continent. Disappointed expectation, he cherished a violent je against his younger surviving brothers W and Henry; and, irritated by an imagin iront, he quitted the court, and after a attempt to surprise the citadel of Rouen, Hugh de Neufchatelle, a powerful Norm ron, and openly levied war against his After a struggle of several years, he w sieged in the castle of Gerberoy, in the voisin. In one of the rencounters beneath walls, Robert happened to engage the kin was concealed by his helmet, and both o being resolute, a fierce combat ensued; last the young prince wounded his father arm, and dismounted him. On his calli for assistance, his voice discovered him son, who, struck with remorse and horror himself at his feet, and implored forgi

VI

or the moment was implacable, and
recations on his head, hastened to his
Robert's horse, which the prince had
m to mount. But the impression of
enerosity, together with the mediation
een, overcame the reluctance of the
brought about a reconciliation between
Robert, who soon after accompanied
gland.

now gained a respite from war, Wil-
oyed the interval in an undertaking
es honour to his memory. He ap-
mmissioners to survey all the lands in
m; their extent in each district; their
s, tenures, and value; and the quantity
, pasture, wood, and arable land which
ined. This monument, called Domes-
, was perfected in six years, and is
rved in the exchequer. *

the king was naturally a great econo-
vas extremely addicted to hunting; and
are he indulged, at the expence of his
subjects. Not content with those large
hich former kings possessed in all parts
d, he resolved to make a new forest
hester, the usual place of his residence;
hat purpose he laid waste the country
shire for an extent of thirty miles, ex-
inhabitants, seized their property, and
olished churches and convents, without
ny compensation to the sufferers. At
time, he enacted laws which prohibited

* few years ago, a certain number of copies of this
cord, were printed for the use of members of
&c. Alfred composed a work of the same
h was long preserved at Winchester.

his subjects from hunting in his fores
the severest penalties: the killing of a
boar, or even a hare, was punished with
of the delinquent's eyes; and that at
when the killing a man could be atoned
moderate fine.

A. D. 1083. The domestic happiness of was again interrupted by the de consort Matilda, whom he tender and a war in which he was involved with demanded his presence in Normandy. the French barons, sanctioned by their s had trespassed on his frontiers; and the sure of William was increased by the which Philip of France had thrown ou his person. He was become corpulent, been detained in bed some time by sickne Philip jocularly expressed his surprise, brother of England should be so long delivered of his big belly. This being to William, he sent Philip word, that a he was up, he would present so many Notre-dame, as perhaps would give lit sure to the king of France; alluding to t practice at that time, of women afte birth. Immediately after his recovery an army into, and laid waste the Isle of and took the town of Mante, which he to ashes. But the progress of these h was stopped by an accident, which pu to his life. His horse starting, he bru belly on the pommel of the saddle; an in a bad habit of body, and apprehen consequences, he ordered himself to be

e had exercised: he is
car, and the other En
ased; left Normandy
n Robert; and wrote t
o crown his second son, William.
s third son, he bequeathed nothing
ssions of his mother Matilda; but
he would one day surpass both
in power and opulence. Having
spositions, he expired in the sixty-
his age, and in the twenty-first year
ver England.

s have been more fortunate than
vere more entitled to grandeur and
m the abilities and vigour of mind
layed in all his conduct. His spi-
nd enterprising; and his ambition,
itant, generally submitted to the
d policy. Though not insensible
he was steeled against compassion;
act was too austere, to render his
opular over a vanquished people,
he was both a master and a tyrant.
iam had issue, besides his three
rived him,* five daughters; Cicily,
holy trinity of Caen, where she
ntia, married to the earl of Brit-
contracted to Harold: Adela,
ephen earl of Blois, by whom she
, William, Theobald, Henry, and
whom the elder was neglected on
e imbecility of his understanding:
who died on her journey to join her
the king of Gallicia.

ourth son, named Richard, who was killed
stag.

procured his father's letter to L
than he hastened to England, that by hi
he might anticipate the claims of Robe
riving before the intelligence of his father
he secured the fortresses of Dover, P
and Hastings; on plausible pretences,
session of the royal treasure; and then d
himself, was solemnly crowned by the
who professed his ready obedience to
wish of his friend and benefactor, the Co

About the same time, Robert was ackn
ed successor to Normandy; but the tra
with which this partition was effected, v
interrupted. The barons, who possesse
both in England and Normandy, were
at the separation of those territories;
spected the claim of primogeniture in
and they preferred his open and generou
to the haughty disposition of his brot
conspiracy was formed against Willi
chiefs of it were Odo, bishop of Baie
Robert earl of Mortaigne, maternal br
the Conqueror; and with these were as
many of the most potent Norman baron

Conscious of his danger, William ende
to conciliate the affections of the Eng
promises of future lenity, and the indul
hunting in the royal forests. Their eas
lity swelled his forces to a numerous arn
which he marched into Kent, and co
his uncles, who had seized the fortresse
vensey and Rochester, to surrender. T
mission of the principals, with the indol
duct of Robert, broke the hopes of th

ıy, but he invaded the privileges of the
ınd seized the temporalities of the va-
›prics and abbies. His ambition was
his avarice; he envied his brother the
ı of Normandy; acquired by artifice
:sses of St. Valory and Albermarle;
crossed the sea with a formidable army.
iation of the nobles on both sides pre-
fairs from coming to extremities; and
ıty, advantageous to William, he ob-
ıe territory of Eu, and the towns of
and Fescamp, on condition that he
ısist Robert in reducing Maine, which
ted from his authority. The two bro-
agreed, that on the demise of either
issue, the survivor should inherit his
s.

contest between William and Robert,
he youngest son of the Conqueror, had
th the latter; but in the treaty that

ing reproved by William for this ill-timed ge
rosity, he replied, "What, shall I suffer my b
ther to die of thirst? where shall we find anot
when he is gone?" Prince Henry was soon af
obliged to capitulate; and being despoiled of
his patrimony, wandered about for some ti
with a few faithful adherents, and often felt
deepest distress.

To the Norman war succeeded hostilities
Scotland, and these were scarce suspended
fore the enmity of Robert and William was
newed. The latter had invaded Norma
with twenty thousand men; but his progr
was checked by a domestic insurrection, and
intelligence that the Welsh had entered Engl
Immediately returning, by his vigour he crush
the rebels, and repelled the invaders; but t
noise of these petty wars and commotions so
sunk in the tumult of the crusades, which e
grossed the attention and agitated the hearts
the principal nations of Europe.

A. D. 1069. The Arabians, inflamed by the pretend
revelations of Mahomet, had spread th
empire from the banks of the Ganges
the straights of Gibraltar. The Turcoma
who were their brethren in faith, and their riv
in dominion, had wrested from them Syria, a
possessed themselves of Jerusalem. The barb
rous manners of the Turks terrified the pilgri
who attempted to visit the holy sepulchre; a
these, on their return, filled all Christend
with indignation against the infidels. Abo
the rest, Peter the Hermit, a native of Amie
in Picardy, was distinguished by his eloquen
and the vehemence of his complaints; nor w
his resentment against the Moslems confined

wor

ıf, and of Peter himself, who repre-
ıdignity the Christian name suffered
ng the holy city to remain in the
fidels, was answered by the accla-
a countless multitude, inflamed with

A second council, which Martin
mont, in Auvergne, was still more
ed: his pathetic exhortation kindled
ıce of his hearers: "It is the will of
he will of God!" was the universal
. The sign of the cross became the
ıion, and was affixed on their right
r all who enlisted themselves in this
are.

; the general ardour, that while the
ıd vigorous took up arms, the in-
ged contributed to the expedition by
money. A promiscuous disorderly
of 300,000 persons, impatient to
operations, under the conduct of

Toulouse, Godfrey of Bouillon, prince
bant, and Stephen count of Blois.

Robert duke of Normandy, impelled
bravery and mistaken generosity of his
had early engaged in the crusade; but
destitute of money, he offered to mortg
rather sell his dominions, to his brother W
for the inadequate sum of ten thousand
The bargain was soon concluded; and
Robert set out with a magnificent train
holy land, William possessed himself
mandy, and thus reunited, beneath
thority, the extensive territories of his fa

Rufus himself was far from being i
with the enthusiasm of the age. He w
reputed irreligious, and we are told that
accepted of sixty marks from a Jew, wh
had been converted to Christianity, ar
engaged him by the present to assist
bringing back the youth to Judaism. V
employed both menaces and persuasi
that purpose; the convert was, howe
flexible; and the king, when he sent
father, to inform him of the event, ob
that it was but equitable he should retain
money for the pains he had taken, tho
had failed of the intended success.

But whatever might be the religious c
William, certain it is that he quarrell
Anselm the primate. The king had und
an expedition against Wales, and requir
archbishop to furnish his quota of s
the latter was afraid to refuse, but sen
so miserably accoutred, that William th
ed him with a prosecution. Affairs c
such extremities between them, that

his life, retired beyond sea; and all
ralities were seized. But he was re-
h great respect by the Roman pon-
spoused his cause with so much zeal
menace the king with excommuni-
ough he suspended to fulminate his

sion of Normandy and Maine A. D.
led the dominions, but by di- 1097.
id weakened the power of
The Norman nobles in their revolts
orted by the French monarch. Helie
Fleche, a small town of Anjou, had
he affections of the citizens of Maine;
introduced into the town of Mans,
siege of the citadel. William, who
ng in Devonshire when he received
ence of this hostile attempt, was so
that he immediately turned his horse,
ped to the port of Dartmouth. He
weather so tempestuous that the ma-
sidered it dangerous to put to sea;
m ordered them to set sail instantly,
m, that they never yet heard of a
was drowned. By his celerity and
preserved the citadel of Mans, and
elie into his own territories; but in
f the castle of Majol he received a
hich obliged him to abandon the en-
id to return to England.
ck, however, had not diminished in
the insatiate desire of acquisition.
arl of Poictiers, and duke of Guienne,
ith the spirit of adventure, determined
e crusaders; and as he too wanted
equip himself, he proposed to mort-

gage

army to escort the money, and to take
sion of the rich provinces of Guienne a
tou, when an accident put a final stop t
ambitious projects and views of aggr
ment. He was engaged in the New
in hunting, accompanied by Walter T
French gentleman, remarkable for his
archery; and as William dismounted
chace, Tyrrel, impatient to shew his d
let fly an arrow at a stag which suddenl
before him. The arrow glancing fro
struck the king in the breast, and
killed him. Tyrrel, fearful of suspicio
perhaps he was conscious of incurring
informing the royal attendants, gained
shore, embarked for France, and proc
an expedition to Jerusalem, as a penanc
involuntary crime. The body of Wil
found by the country people, and con
a cart to Winchester, where it was i
Perfidious and oppressive, the extremes
gality and rapacity, which were reco
him, had long estranged from him the
his subjects. The chief monuments
petuate his name are the Tower, We
Hall, and London Bridge.

Adorned with the barren laurels
had acquired by his valour in rescuin
lem from the infidels, Robert was retu
his native country, when in passing

* The person who carried the corpse of Ruf
ment was named *Purkis*, and some of his des
this very day reside near the same spot.

s struck with the charms of Sybilla,
r of an Italian count, whose hand
and obtained. But while in that
imate he indulged his passion, his
ngland and Normandy in vain ex-
arrival; and the crown, which both
d martial reputation entitled him to,
l by his younger brother.

Henry was hunting with A. D.
he New Forest, when that 1100.
iet his fate; and, hastening
ter, extorted by menaces the royal
m William de Breteuil, the keeper.
ithout delay his journey to London,
assembled some noblemen and pre-
his address or liberality gained to
was saluted king; and in less than
after his brother's death, was so-
wned by Maurice bishop of Lon-

tain the dignity which he had thus
usurped, Henry resolved to court,
fessions, the favour of his subjects.
a charter, which was framed to
ıy of the grievous oppressions that
omplained of, during the reigns of
nd brother. To the clergy he pro-
he would never seize the revenues
ıbbey during its vacancy; nor farm,
f, for money, any ecclesiastical bene-
ıe mobility he engaged, that upon the
y earl, baron, or military tenant, his
ıoever should be named in his will,
admitted to the possession of his
paying a just relief. He remitted
p of minors, and allowed guardians

offences, and forgave all debts du
crown; he required that the vassals of t
should enjoy the same privileges v
granted to his own; and he promised
confirmation and observance of the law
Edward, for which the English had lo
in vain.

Such were the chief articles of this c
charter, a copy of which was lodged
abbey of each county; but which, t
served the present purpose, in less th
tury fell into oblivion. Henry was
promise, but slow to redress grievanc
flowed from the exercise of regal a
To increase indeed his popularity, he c
to prison Ralph Flambard, bishop of
who had been the chief instrument of o
under his brother; but this act was fol
another which was a direct violation o
charter: he kept the see of Durham v
five years, and, during that time, re
revenues.

Sensible of the great authority wl
selm had acquired by his character
and by the persecution he had sustaine
anxious to engage his friendship; an
ingly reinstated him in his dignities.
formed a design of marrying Matilda,
of Malcolm the third, king of Scotl

to Edgar Atheling; which contract settled, her espousals with Henry were ated by the primate, with great pomp nagnificence.

his marriage with a Saxon princess, y had endeared himself to the English, support became necessary for the ce of his crown. Robert, on his A. D. 1101. l from Italy, had established his rity over Normandy, and was invited into nd by several of the principal nobility; he seamen were affected with the general arity of his character; and carried over to he greater part of the fleet, which had been ped to oppose his passage. By caresses eclarations, by the influence of Anselm, and me of Matilda, Henry assembled a suf- force to encounter his brother, and pressed rds towards Portsmouth, where he had d. The two armies lay in sight of each for several days without coming to action: princes seemed apprehensive of the event, by the mediation of Anselm, a treaty took . It was stipulated that Robert, in lieu of retensions to England, should receive a n of 3000 marks; that if either of the s died, the survivor should succeed to his ions; and that the adherents of each d receive a full pardon.

ough the advantage of this treaty was estly on the side of Henry, he was the o violate it; and to watch the moment to e himself on the friends of Robert. The violence and tyranny of the Norman ba- oon afforded him an opportunity to bring al, and to execute the earls of Shrewsbury

and Surrey, the principal abettors of R
Enraged at their fate, that prince had
over to England, and remonstrated se
with his brother; but he met with so cole
ception, that he fancied his own liberty i
ger, and was glad to purchase an escape
signing his pension.

The misconduct of Robert encourag
ambition of Henry. The former was
nately plunged in the most dissolute ple
or abandoned to the most womanish supers
and Normandy became a scene of violenc
depredation. To avail himself of thes
orders, Henry with a formidable army e
the dutchy. In his first campaign he
Baieux by storm, and was admitted into
In his second, Robert, roused from his let
advanced to meet him, with a view of
nating their quarrels in a decisive battle:
sumed his wonted spirit; he animated his
by his example; and in the first charge
the English ranks; but when he had the
prospect of victory, his hopes were blas
the cowardice and flight of one of his ge
and Robert with ten thousand of his fol
were made prisoners. Normandy sub
to the victor; and the vanquished prin
carried into England, and detained duri
remainder of his life in the castle of Car
Glamorganshire.

The conquest of Normandy seemed to es
the throne of Henry; and, having obtai
ends, he no longer yielded an implicit obe
to the opinions of Anselm, who had treat
with contumacy: a violent rupture tool
between them; but, by the mediation

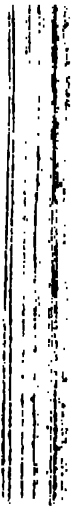
bert a prisoner in England, he had William, the son of that prince, a ut six years old, to the care of Halie n, a nobleman of strict honour and who had married Robert's natural

Henry had soon reason to repent of ; for when he desired to recover of William's person, Halie conveyed the court of Fulk, count of Anjou, and ned for him the protection of Lewis king of France. These measures de- he presence of Henry in Normandy; frontiers of that dutchy, he waged l but not an inglorious war, against of Anjou, and the king of France, rted the pretensions of the son of Ro- r his address, however, he detached n the interests of the confederates; is vigour and conduct, he soon after Lewis to subscribe a peace, in which

tained at Barfleur, whence Henry ha
to return to England, some hou
father, his captain and crew had co
interval in drinking; and when th
anchor, in their impatience to overta
they struck the ship on a rock, wh
mediately foundered. William w
put into the long-boat, and had
clear of the ship; when hearing the
natural sister, the countess of Perche,
the seamen to row back, in hopes of
But the numbers who then crowd
sunk the boat; and the prince with
nue perished. Above an hundred
young noblemen of the principal
England and Normandy were lost
casion; and the only person who
relate the melancholy tale, was a
Rouen, who clung to the mast, and
up the next morning by fishermen.

A. D. 1121. When this mournful intel
conveyed to Henry, he fai
and never after recovered
chearfulness. He had now no legi
except one daughter, Matilda, whon
trothed, when only eight years of
emperor Henry the fifth, and whom
over to be educated in Germany.
her absence and marriage into a fo
should endanger the succession, an
of male heirs, Henry obtained th
Adalair, daughter of Godfrey duke
Adalair, however, proved barren i
braces; and Fulk count of Anjou
his jealousy, he thought it prudent t
him by bestowing his daughter M

ovide the court *grata* with pro-
) furnish carriages whenever his
a progress into any of the coun-
duties were aggravated by the
which they were inforced; but
ed with rigour those who had
nfidence by adding insult to op-



llity of England enabled A. D.
sit Normandy, and soon 1131.
l, his satisfaction was in-
daughter, the empress Matilda,
to bed of a son, who was named
n this occasion, the nobility of
Normandy renewed to that prin-
of fealty which they had already
more sons of whom she was suc-
ered, augmented Henry's parti-
out some incursions of the Welsh
n to return to England, when he
ttacked by an illness, at St. Denis

plished princes that has filled the E
throne. His person was manly, and his c
nance engaging; he was eloquent, penetr
and brave; affable in his address; and str
susceptible of friendship as well as resent
By his great progress in literature, he ac
the name of *Beau-clerc*, or the scholar; b
application to those sedentary pursuits :
nothing of the activity and vigilance of h
vernment.*

A. D. 1135. The failure of male heirs to the
dom of England and the dutc
Normandy, seemed to leave the s
sion open, without a rival, to the empres
tilda; and as Henry had made all his vas
both states swear fealty to her, he pre
that they would not easily be induced to
at once from her hereditary right, and
their own reiterated engagements; but i
from his own family he had to dread the in
of his daughter's title.

Adela, daughter of William the Conq
who married the count of Blois, brougl
several sons; among whom Stephen and H
the two youngest, had been invited o
England by the late king, and had re
great honours, riches, and preferment.
having a partiality for the church, was c
bishop of Winchester; and Stephen had
ried Matilda, daughter and heiress of the
of Boulogne, who brought him, beside

* At his accession, Henry granted a charter to L
which seems to have been the first step towards re
that city a corporation.

he neglected not to cultivate the
of the English nation. By his bravery
uired the esteem of the barons; by
ity and affability, he had obtained
ns of the people, particularly of the
; and no sooner had Henry breathed
n he gave full reins to his ambition.
d over to England; and though the
Dover and of Canterbury, apprised
ose, shut their gates against him, he
t till he arrived at London. The
who had been prepared by his emis-
ted him king; and by the influence
her, the bishop of Winchester, he
clergy. The obsequious conscience
bishop of Canterbury, was recon-
artful fiction; and Stephen was so-
wned by that prelate, without much
indeed, but without opposition.
ot, however, on the fidelity of the
obility that Stephen relied. He al-

cester, natural son to the late king, a
honour and abilities, and zealously atta
his sister Matilda. This nobleman inde
the oath of fealty to Stephen; but he
with the reserve that the king should n
vade any of his rights or dignities. Th
and the nobility imitated his example; an
of the latter, as the price of submission, r
the right of fortifying their castles, and
ting themselves in a state of defence. A
land was immediately filled with their for
and the aristocratical power, which is
so oppressive in feudal governments, rose
to a height before unknown, and overs
the regal authority.

But Stephen was not of a disposition
to submit to these encroachments, wi
severe retaliation. He indulged his mer
in every species of depredation; and th
nation with which the English bore th
gance was fomented by the earl of G
who retiring beyond sea, solemnly renou
allegiance, and sent the king a defiance.
the same time David, king of Scotland, c
at the head of an army in defence of
Matilda's title, and penetrating into Y
committed the most barbarous deva
The fury of his ravages enraged the
barons, who might otherwise have been
to join him; they assembled their vass
at North Allerton awaited the enemy
battle was obstinate; but the Scots

David and his son Henry narrowly es-
pursuit of the victors; and this success
mal-contents into submission.

, however, soon became embroiled
clergy. Many of the prelates acted as
nd employed their military power
heir sovereign, or their neighbours.
these, Roger bishop of Salisbury had
castles at Sherborne and the Devizes;
ephew Alexander, bishop of Lincoln,
d a fortress at Newark. Stephen, sen-
e mischiefs attending these multiplied
esolved to begin with destroying those
gy. On pretence of a fray which had
ween the retinues of the bishop of Sa-
d the earl of Brittany, he seized both
ate and the bishop of Lincoln, and
em to deliver up their strong places.
hop of Winchester, armed with a lega-
ission, though the king's brother, for-
s of blood in the privileges of his order.
d at Westminster he complained of the
f Stephen's measures, and that assem-
oned the king to justify himself before
tephen, instead of resenting the indig-
Aubery de Bare to plead his cause,
sed the two prelates of treason and
The synod however refused to examine
duct until the castles were restored;
this dispute augmented the dis- A. D.
f the people, the empress Ma- 1139.
ited by the legate himself, and
ied by the earl of Gloucester, landed,
peedily joined by many persons of dis-

r immediately broke out in every quar-
ter;

ter; and England, for more than
distressed and laid waste by the m
the contending factions. At last
place between Stephen and the earl c
After a violent shock, the two v
royalists were put to flight; and S
self, surrounded by the enemy, was
by numbers, and taken prisoner.

Had Matilda been capable of m
had she attended to the counsels
friends, she might now have defied
of her enemies: but she was by natu
and imperious; nor did she know
per by affability the harshness of a
phen's queen, seconded by many of
petitioned for the liberty of her husb
dition that he should renounce the
retire into a convent; the legate
prince Eustace, his nephew, might
logue, and the other patrimonial e
father; and the Londoners applied
blishment of king Edward's laws,
those of king Henry. All these pe
ever, were rejected in the most hau
remptory manner; and the legate, a
self of her indiscretion, excit
A. D. doners to revolt. Matilda,
1141. their intentions to seize her
to Oxford, and thence to Winchest
of that city was instantly formed b
who had assembled his vassals, an
joined by the mercenaries of Ste
princess made her escape; but earl
brother, fell into the hands of the en
empress, sensible of his merit and
consented to exchange Stephen fo

expedient, however, produced nothing
he war was still continued with various
nd Matilda, harassed with incessant
ght repose with her son in Normandy.
akness of the competitors, rather than
se of mutual animosity, at last pro-
cit cessation of arms in England; and
he nobility had embarked in the holy
n an event happened that threatened
f hostilities. Prince Henry, who had
s sixteenth year, desirous of receiving
r of knighthood, from his great uncle,
g of Scotland, had repaired to that
h a great retinue, and thence made
ursions into England. In these, his
and vigour, his valour and prudence,
hopes of his party, and soon after his
Normandy, he was, by Matilda's con-
ted in that duchy. Upon the death of
Geoffrey, which happened in the sub-

to anoint that prince as his successor, the
mate refused compliance, and escaped bey
sea from the resentment of his sovereign.

Henry, informed of these dispositions,
vaded England; and at Malmesbury prep
to encounter Stephen in a pitched battle.
great men on both sides, alarmed at the co
quences of a decisive action, compelled the
princes to a negotiation. The death of
tace, during the treaty, facilitated its conclu
On the demise of Stephen, the crown wa
revert to Henry; and William, Stephen's
viving son, was to succeed to the earldo
Boulogne, and his patrimonial estate. A
all the barons had sworn to the observanc
this treaty, and done homage to Henry, as
apparent to the crown, that prince evacu
the kingdom; and the death of Stephen, w
happened the next year, after a short illnes
the fiftieth year of his age, put an end to fa
jealousies.

Had Stephen succeeded by a just title,
been left to the quiet exercise of his power
appears to have been well qualified to
promoted the happiness of his subjects. He
possessed of industry, activity, and courage;
though his judgment may be arraigned, his
manity must be acknowledged, and his ad
commended. His elevation to the throne
duced neither satisfaction to himself, nor
perity to his people. During his whole r
England was rent with civil broils; and an
these, appeals to the pope became comm
every ecclesiastical controversy, though
had always been prohibited by the English
Hence the see of Rome made a rapid progr

EN Henry the second was called to the hrone of England, he was master, in his father, of Anjou and Touraine; in his mother, of Normandy and Maine; in is wife, of Guienne, Poictou, Xaintonge, e, Perigord, Angoumois, and the Limo- d he soon after annexed Brittany to his ates; all which rendered him one of the werful monarchs in Christendom, and an f great jealousy to the king of France.

o countervail the advantages of swaying ptre over such a numerous people and e territories, the subjects of Henry were d by situation and by law, by language manners; and the prince himself, from ience in England, was considered as a foreigner in his French dominions; yet very circumstance, the rising grandeur ouse of Anjou or Plantagenet, could not ness with terror the king of France.

dismissed the obnoxious
revoked all grants m
restored the coin whic
ing the former reign;
execution of justice, ar
lence.

His brother Geoffrey
of the inhabitants, had
ty of Nantz; but dyin
possession of them, H
these territories. By
which he entered into
five years old, and a
her cradle, he prevaile
to oppose his pretensic
he entered Brittany
The able conduct of t
more important advar
concluded another m
son, Geoffrey, and th
the duke of Brittany :
soon after; and Henr
infant son and daught
of that principality.

The French king h
tator of the progress
he resisted his attem
Thoulouse. An open
the two monarchs; bu
memorable event; an
potent rivals were acc
tion of the pope.

A. D. 1161. On his retu
rected his atter
ments of Rom
rapidity not to be bi

f London. He early insinuated him-
e favour of Theobald, archbishop of
, and obtained from that prelate con-
eferment. This enabled him to pur-
ogne, the study of civil and canon
y gradual advances, he rose to the
hancellor of England. Being of a
plendid turn, and apparently little
of ecclesiastical privileges, Henry
n the fittest person, on the death of
for the high station of metropolitan;
er was he installed in this dignity,
red his demeanor and conduct. He
in his retinue and attendants alone,
pomp and lustre; in his own per-
cted the greatest austerity; seemed
employed in reciting prayers, and
es; and all men of penetration plainly
was meditating some great design.
hough he perceived too late, that

their spiritual offences.

The ecclesiastics in that age had r
all immediate subordination to the m
and as many of them were of low
crimes of the blackest dye were commi
with impunity by them. An hundred
since the king's accession had been pe
by men in holy orders. A clerk in W
shire, having debauched a gentleman's
had proceeded to murder the father; th
indignation against the crime, moved
to attempt the remedy of an abuse w
become so palpable; he required that
should be delivered up, and receive
punishment from the magistrate. B
sisted on the privileges of the church,
tained, no greater punishment could b
on the criminal than degradation. H
asperated, summoned an assembly of
lates of England; and demanded whe
were willing to submit the affair to th

the *Constitutions of Clarendon*, were
t opposition.
thus reducing the ancient customs
to writing, endeavoured to prevent
ıpute, on the subjects which they
hought he had thus fully established
:y of the legislature above all spi-
. Apprehensive, however, that the
ıt retract their consent to these con-
: required them to set their seal to
et, of all the prelates, alone opposed
t finding himself deserted even by
he at length gave way, and engaged
ly, with good faith, and without fraud
to observe them. The ratification
was still thought requisite; but
ander owed the highest obligations
: rejected the constitutions of Cla-
h he saw would render England in-
the papal power; and only offered,

cated.

Henry, not satisfied with this sente
ever violent and oppressive, soon afte
Becket to give in the accounts of hi
tration while chancellor; and estimate
lance due, at 44,000 marks; for whi
manded sureties. In this emergency,
the primate's friends advised him to
see, on condition of receiving an acqu
the daring spirit of Becket rejected t
counsels; and he determined to brav
mies. After celebrating mass, whe
previously ordered that the entroit to
munion service should begin with t
princes sat and spake against me, arrayed
cred vestments, and bearing the cro
his hands, he entered the royal apartm
declared that he put himself and his
the protection of the supreme pontiff.

This appeal to the pope in a civil c
a matter new and unprecedented: t

hand, Becket not only issued a
municating the king's chief mi-
but also abrogated and annulled
is of Clarendon; and declared
ded the spiritual thunder over
, solely that the prince might
by a timely repentance.
d the immediate danger, by flat-
er with the prospect of a speedy
etween himself and Becket, which
place; and Becket was allowed
nditions which may be esteemed
e and advantageous to that pre-
ot required to give up any rights
r resign any of those pretensions
the original ground of the con-
as agreed that all these questions
ed in oblivion; but that Becket
ts should, without making farther

his horse.

But Henry did not even gain a tranquillity by his concession. Wh dreaded the sentence of excommu had thought it prudent to associate hi Henry in the royalty. The ceremo performed by the hands of Roger, of York; but Becket pretended, as a Canterbury, he had the sole right and therefore, in the name of the p pended the archbishop of York, an nicated the bishops of London an with others who had assisted at th of the prince.

The king, who was then at Baieu hemently agitated on hearing this r of Becket's arrogance, burst forth clamation against his servants, wh zeal, he said, had so long left hin the enterprises of that ungrateful an

ear Canterbury, and being there
ome assistants, they proceeded in
o the archiepiscopal palace. They
rimate, who trusted entirely to the
f his character, very slenderly at-
I though they threw out many re-
proaches against him, he was so in-
fear, that, without using any pre-
inst their violence, he immediately
) St. Benedict's church to hear ves-
followed him thither, attacked him
tar, and having cloven his head with
, retired without experiencing any

the tragical end of Thomas à Becket,
the most lofty, intrepid, and inflex-
who was able to cover to the world,
ly to himself, the enterprises of pride
n, under the disguise of sanctity, and
he interests of religion; but who cer-

dismissed the obnoxious
revoked all grants ma
restored the coin whic
ing the former reign;
execution of justice, an
lence.

His brother Geoffrey,
of the inhabitants, had a
ty of Nantz; but dying
possession of them, Hen
these territories. By
which he entered into b
five years old, and a da
her cradle, he prevailed
to oppose his pretension
he entered Brittany wit
The able conduct of the
more important advanta
concluded another marr
son, Geoffrey, and the d
the duke of Brittany: the
soon after; and Henry,
infant son and daughter-i
of that principality.

The French king had l
tator of the progress of H
he resisted his attempts t
Thoulouse. An open war

ed the legend of any con-
wo years after his death he
pe Alexander; a solemn
for celebrating his merits:
d with presents from all
; pilgrimages were per-
intercession with heaven;
that in one year, above an
lgrims arrived in Canter-
devotions at his shrine.

Henry, delivered A. D.
of the thunders of 1172.
ook an expedition
t island, about the middle
ury, besides several small
principal sovereignties of
Meath, Ulster, and Con-
d been usual for the one or
take the lead in their wars,
some prince, who seemed,
monarch of Ireland. Ro-

archbishop of reputed sanctity, assa
fore the altar, in the exercise of his fu
on account of his zeal in maintain
astical privileges, must attain the high
of martyrdom; while his reputed
would be ranked among the most
rants that had ever deserved the
detestation of mankind. These co
gave the king the most unaffected co
as it was extremely his interest to cl
from all suspicion, he took no car
the depth of his affliction. He shut
from the light of day, and from al
with his servants: he even refused, c
days, all food and sustenance. Th
apprehending dangerous effects from
were at last obliged to break in u
tude; and employing every topic of
induced him to accept of nourishm
cupied his leisure in taking precauti
the consequences which he so justly a
from the catastrophe of the primate.

The most important point which
to establish, was to convince the po
nocence; or rather to dissuade hin
ceeding to extremities against Eng
archbishop of Rouen, the bishops o

ucn ever filled the legend of any con-
: martyr. Two years after his death he
nized by pope Alexander; a solemn
as established for celebrating his merits:
' was enriched with presents from all
Christendom; pilgrimages were per-
o obtain his intercession with heaven;
is computed, that in one year, above an
thousand pilgrims arrived in Canter-
l paid their devotions at his shrine.

mean time, Henry, delivered A. D.
tant danger of the thunders of 1172.
can, undertook an expedition
reland. That island, about the middle
welfth century, besides several small
ontained the principal sovereignties of
Leinster, Meath, Ulster, and Con-
and as it had been usual for the one or
of these to take the lead in their wars,
s commonly some prince, who seemed,

vade a people, who being always confined
their own island, had never given any reason
complaint to their neighbours. For this purpo
he had recourse to Rome; which assumed a ri
to dispose of kingdoms and empires; and
foreseeing the dangerous disputes, which he
one day to maintain with that see, assisted
give sanctions to claims which were now beco
dangerous to all sovereigns. Adrian III. w
then filled the papal chair was by birth an E
lishman; and being on that account the m
disposed to oblige Henry, he was easily
suaded to act as master of the world, and
make, without any hazard or expence, the ac
sition of a great island to his spiritual ju
diction. Henry, however, though armed
this authority, did not immediately put his de
in execution; but being detained by more i
resting business on the continent, waited fo
favourable opportunity of invading Ireland.

Dermot Macmorrogh, king of Leinster, h
ing rendered himself obnoxious, by his licent
tyranny, had been expelled his dominions b
confederacy, of which the king of Connau
was the chief. The exiled prince applie
Henry for succour, who furnished him with
ters patent, by which he empowered his subj
to aid him in the recovery of his domini
Dermot engaged with Richard, surnamed Str
bow, earl of Strigul; who stipulated, for
assistance, the hand of his daughter Eva, a
promise that he should be declared heir t
territories. While Richard was assembling
vassals, Dermot went into Wales; and mee
with Robert Fitz-Stephens, constable of A
, and Maurice Fitz-Gerald, he also engr
t

them in his service, and obtained their promise of invading Ireland: he himself immediately crossed the seas, concealed himself in a monastery that he had founded, and prepared every thing for the reception of his English allies.

The troops of Fitz-Stephens were first ready. That gentleman landed in Ireland with thirty knights, sixty esquires, and three hundred archers; and with this small body, struck a great terror into the barbarous inhabitants, and seemed to menace them with a signal revolution. The conjunction of Maurice de Pendergast, who, about the same time, brought over ten knights, and sixty archers, enabled Fitz-Stephens to attempt the siege of Wexford, a town inhabited by the Danes; and after gaining an advantage, he made himself master of the place. Soon after, Fitz-Gerald arrived with ten knights, thirty esquires, and a hundred archers; and being joined by the former adventurers, composed a force which nothing in Ireland was able to withstand.

Roderic, the chief monarch of the island, was foiled in different actions; the prince of Ossory was obliged to submit, and give hostages for his peaceable behaviour; and Dermot, not content with being restored to his kingdom of Leinster, projected the dethroning of Roderic, and aspired to the sole dominion of Ireland.

In prosecution of these views, he sent over a messenger to the earl of Strigul, challenging the performance of his promise, and displaying the mighty advantages which might now be reaped from a *reinforcement* of warlike troops from *England*. Strongbow first sent over Raymond, *one of his retinue*, with ten knights and seventy archers

by assault. Roderic, in revenge, cut off
of Dermot's natural son, who had been
hostage in his hands; and Richard, i
Eva, became soon after, by the death of
master of the kingdom of Leinster, and
to extend his authority over all Ireland
ric and the other Irish princes, alarme
danger, and combining together, besie
lin with an army of thirty thousand
earl Richard, making a sudden sall
head of ninety knights, with their f
put this numerous army to rout, chas
off the field, and pursued them wi
slaughter.

Henry, jealous of the progress of his
jects, sent orders to recall the English,
self landed in Ireland, at the head of
dred knights. The adventurers appe
by offering to hold their acquisitions i
lage to his majesty; and the spirits of
being broken, nothing remained but t

ıly established: a numerous progeny
and authority to his crown; and his
in settling the several branches of his
med well calculated to prevent all
ıong the brothers, and to perpetuate
ss of his family. He had appointed
eldest son, to be his successor in the
England, the dutchy of Normandy,
nties of Anjou, Maine, and Touraine;
which lay contiguous, and which, by
ıs, might easily lend to each other
ıistance, both against intestine com-
ıd foreign invasions. Richard, his
, was invested in the dutchy of Gui-
ounty of Poicto.u; Geoffrey, his third
ted, in right of his wife, the dutchy
; and the new conquest of Ireland
d for the appanage of John, his fourth
ıad also negotiated in favour of this
a marriage with Adelais, the only

A. D. 1173. In a visit to Paris, the amb young Henry had been inflamed arts of his father-in-law. He v suaded by Lewis, that by the ceremony nation, in the life of his father, he was in sovereignty. In consequence of these gant ideas, the prince demanded the im possession of England or of Normandy uneasiness of Henry at this claim was i by the conduct of his queen Eleanor, v not less troublesome to her present husb her jealousy, in regard to the fair Ro and others, than she had been to her fo her gallantries. Her younger sons G and Richard participating in her disc escaped to France, and in imitation of th ther, required the independent administr the territories that had been assigned th Europe saw with astonishment three boys ly arrived at puberty, pretend to dethro father, a monarch in the full vigour of and plenitude of his power.

In this dilemma, however reluctantly had recourse to Rome; but though Al well pleased to exert his power in so just cause, launched against the enemies of t the thunders of the Vatican, it was soo these weapons had not the same force a employed in a spiritual controversy; and was reduced to seek more effectual aux in the tribes of banditti, who, under the of Brebancons, or Cottereaux, proffere swords to the most liberal employer.

At the head of twenty thousand of thes but lawless ruffians, and the few troops had brought from Ireland, the king of F

n

of the French; crushed the insur-
ttany; and continued his negotia-
iidst of victory. Though he insisted
the sovereign authority in all his
he offered his undutiful sons the
revenues; but his terms were re-
ıe confederates, who depended on
hey had concerted with the king of
ıd several of the most powerful ba-
and.

uence of that league, the king of
ke into the northern provinces with
of eighty thousand men; which,
sciplined and disorderly, and better
mmitting devastation than for exe-
military enterprise, was become
om the present factious and turbu-
f the kingdom. Henry, who had
is enemies in France, and put his
a posture of defence, now found

great victory, which his generals had
over the Scots, in which William th
was taken prisoner; and which being
as was reported, on the very day of his
tion, was regarded as the earnest of
reconciliation with Heaven, and with T
Becket.

This victory was decisive in favour o
the English conspirators threw thems
the king's mercy; and in a few weeks,
dom was restored to tranquillity. He
mediately hastened to the defence of
man dominions; his presence saved Roue
had been besieged, and nearly surprise
French; and Lewis, who dreaded that
improve his successes, and penetrate
heart of France, consented to a cess
arms, and engaged with sincerity in a
peace.

This was accompanied by a reconcili
tween Henry and his sons. The conditi

possessions; and that the fortresses
h, Stirling, Berwick, Roxborough,
h, should be delivered into Henry's
the performance of articles. This
humiliating treaty was executed in
r. He engaged the king and states
to make a perpetual cession of the
Berwick, and Roxborough, and to
stle of Edinburgh to remain in his
limited time. This was the first
lant which England obtained over
nd indeed the first important trans-
i had passed between the kingdoms.
val of peace was assiduously A. D.
y Henry in the civil admini- 1175.
his kingdom. He enacted se-
ies against robbery, murder, coun-
e coin, and arson; and made many
rial regulations for restraining vio-
njustice. He partitioned England

perfidy of Edric duke of Mercia. ever, still formidable: and at Glo again to dispute the field, when English nobility, equally harasse kings to submit to a compromise a partition of the kingdom. Ca himself the northern part, and southern to Edmond. This pri treaty about a month; he was m ford by two of his chamberlains, Edric, who thereby made way fo of Canute the Dane, to the crown

A. D. 1017. Canute immediately advantage of the feeble and Edward, the infant so To cover, however, his injustice pretences, before he seized their summoned a general assembly of order to fix the succession of the here suborned some nobles to dep treaty of Glocester, it had been in case of Edmond's death, to nam cessor to his dominions, or tutor to and this evidence, supported by Canute, determined the states to ve

termined sooner to trust to the chance
than to subject himself again to a simila
venience.

The flame of discord being renewed
Bernard fell into the hands of the enem
was next taken by assault; and Henry,
thrown himself into that place, escap
difficulty. Each day brought him acc
the cowardice or infidelity of his govern
his spirit, subdued by this reverse of
submitted to the rigorous terms whic
the mediation of the duke of Burgun
offered to him.

The mortification, however, which H
dured on this occasion, was increased b
vering, that his fourth son John, who
been his favourite, had secretly entered
unnatural confederacy which Richard h
ed against him. The unhappy father,
overloaded with cares and sorrows, fi
last disappointment in his domestic te

whom he met with so much duty, that
ared more like legitimate children,
he had by his queen.
:rson, Henry was of a middle stature,
d well proportioned: his countenance
and engaging; his conversation affa-
ntertaining; his elocution easy and
. He loved peace, but possessed both
nd conduct in war; was provident
nidity; severe in the execution of jus-
out rigour; and temperate without
His affections as well as his enmities
n and durable; and his long experi-
ıe ingratitude and infidelity of man,
troyed the natural sensibility of his
hich disposed him to friendship and

eft only two legitimate sons; Richard
eded him, and John, who inheriting
y, was from thence commonly deno-
Lackland. Of his three daughters,

disgust from those who had encou
in his rebellion, and imparted his co
the faithful ministers of Henry, who
ed his ambitious projects.

The love of military glory was his
sion, and he was ardent to acquire i
recovery of Jerusalem from the Sa
zeal against the infidels was commu
his subjects, and broke out on a wr
on the very day of his coronation.
having presumed, contrary to the or
king, to appear in the hall where he
ed, they were dragged forth, and pu
and vengeance fell upon their innocer
Instantly their houses were broken
effects plundered, and themselves sl
The same bloody persecution was exc
them in York as in London; and all i
precluded, by the rank and influe
offenders.

Richard was solicitous about noth
raising supplies for the expedition he
For that purpose he put to sale the re
manors of the crown, and the offices
trust and power. He yielded up fo
sand marks, the vassalage of Scotlar
fortresses of Roxborough and Be
scrupled not to declare he would s
itself, could he find a purchaser; and
the administration in the hands of H
of Durham, and of Longchamp bis
accompanied by all the military and
of the age, be[illegible]er the front
gundy, wh[illegible] engaged to mee
king

essina, where the
e winter. In these quarters, several
broke out between the troops of the
nations; and these were communica-
e two kings, by Richard's refusing to
lice, the sister of Philip, and giving his
Berengaria, daughter of Sanchez, king
rre. Waving immediate jealousies, how-
ey proceeded to the Holy Land, where
rival inspired new life into the christians.
siege of Acre, which had long been form-
s pressed with redoubled ardour. But
mony of the chiefs was of short duration;
le of king of Jerusalem was disputed by
of Lusignan, and Conrade marquis of
serrat. The former was supported by
ard, the latter by Philip; and the opposite
of these great monarchs brought faction
dissention into the christian army. The
ss of the garrison, however, allowed them
to avail themselves of these distractions;
amine compelled the Saracens to open the
of Acre.

the surrender of this place, Philip declared
solution of returning to France, under the
of a bad state of health. He left, however,
Richard, ten thousand troops, under the
mand of the duke of Burgundy, and engag-
oath, not to commence hostilities against
prince's dominions during his absence; but
[illegible] home, than he pro-

ceeded, though secretly, in a project whi present situation of England rendered inv

An open jealousy had broke out b Longchamp and the bishop of Durham, Richard had intrusted with the adminis of that kingdom. The first, armed wi legatine power, hesitated not to arrest h league; and at length had the temerity to into prison, Geoffrey archbishop of York. last act roused from his inactivity prince who summoned the guardian before a cou the nobility and prelates. Longchamp, ous of his error, fled beyond seas, and t deprived of his office of chancellor and just

A. D. 1192. in his quality of legate, he continu to disturb the government. Phi only promoted his intrigues, but e into a correspondence with John; and pro him the hand of his sister Alice, excited seize Richard's transmarine dominions which enterprise he was with difficulty d by the vigilance of his mother, and the m of the council.

A. D. 1192. In the mean time, Richard was ing laurels in the east. He defeat ladin with the slaughter of forty sand infidels; he recovered Ascalon, a vanced within sight of Jerusalem; but lo sence, fatigue and want, had abated the of the crusaders. Every one, except th of England, expressed a desire of returni Europe. Richard was forced to yield t importunities; and he concluded a truc Saladin, by which the christians were possession of Acre, and were allowed a fi grimage to Jerusalem.

R

acquainted with the intrigues of
tured not, on his return, to pass
nce; he sailed therefore to the Adri-
being shipwrecked near Aquileia,
l, in disguise, to pursue his route
many. At Vienna he was arrested
of the duke of Austria, to whom
some disgust at the siege of Acre,
prince was sold to the emperor Henry
ected to consider him as an enemy,
f an alliance he had contracted with
g of Sicily.

ichard, whose renown had A. D.
rld, languished in a dungeon 1193.
irons, the king of France
avail himself of his misfortunes.
general distraction which the intelli-
ccasioned in England, prince John
to the continent, and had concluded
h Philip, by which he stipulated to
ie latter a great part of Normandy,
l in return the investiture of all Ri-
smarine dominions.

mediately invaded Normandy; but
the treachery of John's adherents,
a great part of it, by the gallantry
of Leicester he was repulsed from
Rouen. Nor was John more suc-
is attempt in England: though he
lf master of the castles of Windsor
ford, he found the barons and peo-
here averse to his cause; in conse-
hich he was obliged to retire again

ese transactions, Richard, in Ger-
ed every kind of insult and indignity;

England; and Richard, having recover
liberty, by complying with the terms agr
was crowned anew at Winchester, as if
tended to wipe off the ignominy of captiv

As soon as Philip heard of the kin
liverance, he wrote to his confederate J
these terms: "Take care of yourself—th
is broken loose." The latter, however,
to disengage himself from an associate
fortunes seemed declining, threw himsel
feet of his brother, and implored his
"I forgive you," said the king, "and hop
as easily forget your injuries, as you will
don;" an expression which shewed the ju
mate he had made of John's dising
heart.

During five years from the return of R
the mutual weakness and enmity of the k
France and England engaged them in
of faithless negotiations, and desultory w
and the cardinal of St. Marv. the pope's

works, one Bertrand de Gourdon, an
ierced his shoulder with an arrow.
he king gave orders for the assault;
place, and hanged all the garrison,
ourdon, whom he reserved as an ob-
hom he might wreak all that ven-
uld dictate.
und being rendered mortal by the un-
of the surgeon; and the king, sen-
he was drawing near an end, sent for
" Wretch," said he, " what have I
to you, to induce you to seek my
You have," replied the prisoner, " kill-
our own hands, my father and my two
I am now in your power; you may
severest torments on me, but I shall
hem with pleasure, provided I can
ave been so happy as to deliver the
m such a nuisance." The mind of
was softened by the approach of death,
agnanimity of Gourdon: he ordered
released, and a sum of money to be
im; but one of Richard's generals,
seizing the unhappy man, flayed him
then hanged him.

ed Richard, in the tenth year A. D.
ign, and forty-second of his 1199.
was buried at Fonteverard.

ome marks of his poetical genius re-
most shining parts of his character
litary talents, and his personal cou-
ich gained him the appellation of
e Lion," or " the Lionhearted." He
him no issue; and, by his last will,
ed John heir to all his dominions,
y a formal deed, before he embarked
for

whom John, after being acknowledged
mandy and England, prepared to carry
war vigorously. The selfish intriguin
racter of Philip facilitated his progres
than the force of his arms. Constantia
ther of Arthur, more apprehensive of a
ally than of an open enemy, secretly car
her son from Paris, put him into the h
his uncle, restored the provinces which
hered to him, and made him do homage
dutchy of Brittany, which was regard
fief of Normandy.

As Philip, after this incident, could
pect to carry on the war with success,
sented to a treaty with John, in which
mits of their territories were adjusted;
render their union more permanent, the
England gave his niece, Blanche of Ca
marriage to prince Lewis, Philip's eld
and with her the baronies of Issoudu
Graçai, and some other fiefs in Berri.

id; and having procured a divorce
vife, he espoused Isabella, regardless
naces of the pope, and the general
mankind.

sentment of the count of A. D.
ecretly excited to arms the 1201.
s of Poictou and Normandy;
John crossed the seas, he found he
aly his own subjects to contend with,
wer of France. Dangers multiplied
side: his barons were disaffected,
uke of Brittany, who was rising to
te, joined the king of France and the
obles. Impatient of military renown,
prince had entered Poictou with a
, and had invested the queen dow-
nor, in Mirabeau, when he was sur-
is camp by John, his troops dispersed,
lf made prisoner. Fearful of his
cruel tyrant, John, ordered him to
hed; but when he found his com-
d not been obeyed, he stabbed him
vn hands, and threw his dead body
ine.

were struck with horror at this cruel
as John had in his hands Eleanor,
o Arthur, the Britons chose for their
Alice, the younger daughter of Con-
a second marriage. They solicited
ace of Philip, who received their ap-

while John consumed his hours in pastim
amusements in Rouen. "Let the French
said he, "I will retake in a day what it h
them years to acquire." Yet instead
filling his vaunt, he meanly claimed th
tection of the Roman pontiff; but Phi
A. D. 1204. stead of retiring at the comm
the pope's legates, laid siege to C
Gaillard, the most considerable
on the frontiers of Normandy; which
taken in a night assault, Rouen alone
tained some resistance, and the citizens d
ed thirty days to advertise their prince
danger. Upon the expiration of that te
opened their gates; and Philip, not
with this acquisition, carried his victorio
into the western provinces, and soon
Anjou, Maine, Touraine, and part of Poi
A. D. 1206. To recover his transmarine do
John landed with a considerabl
at Rochelle: but, on the appr
Philip, he deserted his troops, and retu
England covered with shame; and tho
obtained a short respite from war, by
for two years with the French monar
interval was still more disgraceful to
the alternate weakness and despotism o
vernment, and by the encroachments an
pance of the church.

A. D. 1207. Innocent the third, a lofty
terprising genius, availing himse
dispute which had arisen from
regular election for the see of Can
claimed the right of nominating the pri
England. He commanded the monks
nons of Christ-church, who had hithe

that important privilege, to choose, on
of excommunication, cardinal Langton,
glishman by birth, but warmly attached
see of Rome. In vain the monks repre-
, that an election, without a previous
om the king, would be highly irregular:
ily had the courage to persevere in his
tion; the rest, overcome by the menaces
pope, complied with his mandate.

n, inflamed with the utmost rage when he
of this interference of the court of Rome,
ed from the monastery the prior and the
of Christ-church; and when threatened
he resentment of Innocent, he burst out
iolent invectives, and swore if the pope
med to lay his kingdom under an inter-
hat he would send to him all the bishops
lergy in England, and confiscate all their
s. These sallies of passion, however, were
om shaking the resolution of the Roman
F, who, sensible that the king had lost
nfidence of his people, fulminated against
he sentence of interdict.

e execution of that sentence was calculated
ike a superstitious people with the deepest

The nation was of a sudden deprived of
terior exercise of its religion; the altars
despoiled of their ornaments; the dead,
id of being interred in consecrated ground,
thrown into ditches, or buried in the com-
fields; marriage was solemnized in the
ch-yards; and every circumstance carried
toms of the most immediate apprehension
vine vengeance.

the other hand, the king confiscated the
es of all the clergy who obeyed the inter-
dict;

dict; and treated with the utmost rig
adherents of the church of Rome.
some of the clergy yielded to his threats,
lebrated divine service, they complied
luctance, and were regarded both by the
and the people, as men who sacrificed th
sciences to their fears or their interest.

During this contest, the king attemp
tary expeditions against Scotland, agai
land, and against the Welsh; and co
prevailed more from the weakness of his
than his own vigour or abilities: but th
of these enterprises was obscured by the
of his government, and the licentiousne
private conduct.

A. D. 1213. The court of Rome finding interdict had not produced the effect, determined to proceed to of excommunication. John alarmed at t offered to acknowledge Langton as and to restore the exiled clergy; but insisting on full reparation for the rents confiscated estates, the king broke off ference.

Without temporizing any longer, Inn solved John's subjects from their oaths o and allegiance; declared him to have f by his contumacy, his crown; and offe the king of France.

Philip could not withstand this tempti He levied a great army, and collecte ports of Normandy and Picardy one t seven hundred vessels. To oppose hi assembled at Dover sixty thousand men sufficient, had they been animated with z the minds of the common people were in

nt demands of his m[illegible]er; and even
arter, in which he declared he had,
ission of his own sins, resigned Eng-
reland to God, to St. Peter and St.
o pope Innocent, and his successors
tolic chair; agreeing to hold those
s feudatories of the church of Rome,
ual payment of a thousand marks.
nage to Pandulf in the most abject
nd paid part of the tribute, which he
is kingdom as the patrimony of St.
le the legate, elated by the triumph
l power, trampled on the money that
his feet, as an earnest of the subjection
dom.

raceful tameness of John, however,
tirely delivered him from danger.
d with indignation that England was
er the protection of the see of Rome;
ned of being frustrated in an expe-
h had cost him so much money: and

abandon the enterprise, without the r
ration he expected.

A. D. 1214. To retaliate some of the inju had received, from the province of which acknowledged his authorit attempted to penetrate into France; but telligence of the decisive victory which obtained at Bovines over one hundred a thousand Germans, led by the empero inspired him with humbler thoughts; hi were confined to ruling peaceably ove land: but even this was denied him; and humiliating scene of calamity still awaite

The feudal system, which had long be blished in England, gave such influence aristocracy, that the royal authority w great measure eclipsed by that of the When the conquest of England was ac by William, the necessity of entrusting power in the hands of a prince who was to tain a military dominion over a vanquish tion, had engaged the Norman barons to to a more severe and absolute prerogativ that to which men of similar rank wer monly subjected; and England, during a of an hundred and fifty years, was gover an authority unknown in the same degree the kingdoms founded by the northern co ors. Henry the first, that he might alli people to exclude his elder brother Robe granted them a charter favourable in mat ticulars to their liberties; Stephen had re the grant; Henry the second had confirm but the concessions of all these princes h mained a dead letter; when John, equally

ted on the nation by a palpable en-
t of the see of Rome, ought always
ected by the English. This prelate
plan of reforming the government,
the way for it, by inserting a clause
which he administered to the king,
ould absolve him from excommuni-
at he would re-establish the good
predecessors, and abolish the wicked
maintain justice and right in all his
" Soon after, he shewed to some of
a copy of the charter of Henry the
was nearly forgotten, and advised
ist on its renewal. The barons swore
lose their lives sooner than desist
asonable a demand: the confederacy
er; a more numerous meeting was
at St Edmond's Bury, under colour
; and the members, inflamed by the
f Langton, and incited by the sense
m wrongs, took an oath before the

ward: a delay was asked, and granted; an
interval was employed by John to influen
pope in his favour. Innocent, who foresa
if the administration fell into the hands
high-spirited nobility they would vindica
independence of their country, while he a
the king to grant such demands as should a
reasonable, expressed his disapprobation
conduct of the barons, and exhorted the p
to interpose, to put an end to civil discord

The barons heard, with more indifferenc
might have been expected, the displeasure
court of Rome; and as soon as the time g
to the king was expired, they met at Sta
and collected their forces, consisting of
two thousand knights, besides retainers a
ferior persons without number. Elate
their power, they advanced in a body to
ley, within twenty miles of Oxford, the
where the court then resided; and sent
king a schedule containing their princip
mands. John had no sooner perused it, t
burst into a furious passion, swearing he
never grant such privileges as must reduc
self to slavery.

The confederated nobles, informed of
swer, determined to rely on their swords
besieged the castle of Northampton, were
ted into that of Bedford, occupied Wa
entered London without opposition. Th
waste the royal parks and palaces, and con
the other barons to join them, on pain of ra
their estates. So formidable indeed wer
menaces, and so universal the disaffectio
the king was left at Odiham in Hampshi
a retinue of only seven knights; and after

c

submit all differences to the pope, he
iself at last obliged to yield without

t Runnymede, between Windsor and
spot which will ever be celebrated in
iat a conference took place between
his martial barons. After a debate
ys, the king, with a facility somewhat
, signed and sealed the famous deed
NA CHARTA, or the GREAT CHARTER,
nted or secured very important liberties
gy, the barons, and the people, though
f what they have since freely and legi-
njoyed. In short, many of the stipu-
the great charter, from the change of
nd institutions, appear at this day tri-
iculous; yet there can be no doubt but
a noble acquisition at the time it was
its chief provisions were in favour of
y and the clergy; but to render the
he barons more popular, some salutary
s were introduced for the protection of
classes.

are the execution of the charter, Lon-
eft in the hands of the barons, and the
as consigned to the custody of the pri-
ith the consent of the king, the confe-
ose from their own body, twenty-five
as conservators of the public liberty,
authority no limits were prescribed,
xtent or duration. All men through-
gdom were obliged, under the penalty
ation, to swear obedience to them:
ights from each county, chosen by the
s, were to make reports of such evil
s required redress, conformable to the

his concessions. Retiring to the isle
he meditated the most fatal vengean
his enemies. He secretly sent abroa
saries to invite the rapacious Brabançc
service; he dispatched a messenger tc
complain before that tribunal of th
imposed upon him; and Innocent c
himself as feudal lord of the kingdor
bull, by which he annulled the who
He prohibited the barons from exacti
servance of it; he prohibited the king
ing any regard to it; and he pronounc
ral sentence of excommunication ag
one who should persevere in mainta
iniquitous pretensions.

Under the sanction of this bull, * Jo
as he had collected his foreign forces,
the mask. The barons, enticed into
curity, had taken no rational measi
assembling their forces. The king wa
the field: his rapacious mercenaria

the whole extent of England from Do-
erwick, laid the provinces waste on each
him, as if he had been in an enemy's

arons, reduced to this desperate A. D.
y, employed a remedy no less 1216.
, and offered the king of France
owledge Lewis, his eldest son, as their
n, provided he would protect them from
nce of the tyrant.

rospect of such a prize rendered Philip
ss to the menaces of the court of Rome,
reatened him with excommunication if
ed a prince under the protection of the
; but he refused to intrust his son and
he caprice of the English barons, with-
e pledge for his safety. He therefore
d of them twenty-five of the most illus-
obles; and no sooner had he received
ostages, than he sent over Lewis with a
is army.

isequence of that young prince's appear-
England, John's foreign troops, being
evied in Flanders, refused to serve against
of their monarchy. The barons either
l to join the standard of Lewis, or throw
him the gates of their castles. Dover
sisted his arms. But the union between
lish and the French was of short dura-
e preference of Lewis to the latter, soon
the jealousy of the former. A French
n, the viscount Melun, as it is said, re-
lso on his death bed, to some of the Eng-
ons, who were his friends, the secret
ns of Lewis to exterminate them and
milies. This story was universally re-

ported

chusing the proper time for his march, the inundation all his carriages, treas gage, and regalia. The affliction for aster, and vexation from the distracte affairs, increased an indisposition under then laboured; and though he reached of Newark, he soon after gave up the g was buried at Worcester. He expir forty-ninth year of his age, and the e of his reign; leaving two legitimate so and Richard, the eldest of whom was years old.

The character of John, is a compl vices equally mean and odious; cow vity, licentiousness, ingratitude, treac cruelty. It is hard to say whether hi as a son, a brother, husband, or a k most culpable. By his misconduct h flourishing provinces of France, the a trimony of his family; he subjected his to a shameful vassalage under the see

for the kingdom at large, 1216.
loyal nobleman, the earl
, was appointed protector of the
g the king's minority, by the general
: barons. That he might reconcile
ıe government of his pupil, he made
a new charter of liberties, in some
ered from the former; but confirming
ing stipulations. This was followed
r of forests; which declared offences
in the king's forests no longer capital,
unishable by fine and imprisonment.
isfaction which these charters diffused
felt by Lewis; the personal resent-
he barons to John was buried with
: grave; their jealousy of their new
daily increased; a large detachment
nch had been routed near Lincoln;
fleet had suffered a considerable de-
These events de-

cification which had been chiefly owin
wisdom and valour; and he was s
in the government by Peter des Roche
of Winchester, and Hubert de Burgh,
ticiary. The counsels of the latter wer
followed; and had he possessed equal
with Pembroke, he seemed to be ev
worthy of filling the place of that virtuo
man. But the licentious and powerful
having broken the reins of subjection,
be restrained by laws under a minori
held by force the royal castles; they
the king's demesnes; they oppressed t
sals; and protected the worst kind of
in their robberies and extortions, in de
legal government.

Justice, however, was executed wi
severity against disorders less
A. D. 1222. because more unpremeditate
quarrel had arisen between t
doners and the inhabitants of Westmi
match of wrestling. The former ha
down some houses belonging to the
Westminster; and in the tumult had
of the cry commonly employed by th
troops. The justiciary made enquiry
disorder; and finding one Constanti
Arnulf to have been the ringleader,

this declaration, he resigned into his
important fortresses of the Tower
castle, which had been intrusted to
r. Several of the most powerful ba-
ver, instead of imitating his example,
e design of surprising London; but
king prepared for defence, they de-
d being threatened with excommuni-
hey persisted in detaining the king's
y at length gave way, and surrender-
e fortresses.

nry approached to man's character became every day own. Gentle, humane, and even to a fault, he appears to have y in nothing, but to have received ression from those who surrounded hout activity or vigour, he was unfit t war; without policy or art, he was ted to maintain peace. His resent- ough hasty and violent, were not hile he was found to drop them with ty; his friendships were little valued, ey were neither founded on selection, ined with constancy. A. D. 1227.

ble and faithful minister Hubert de a sudden fit of caprice Henry threw

of Winchester, a Poictevin by birth, distinguished by his arbitrary principle by his abilities. He persuaded He invite over a number of Poictevins, an foreigners, whom he believed could b safely trusted than the English; an strangers soon exhausted the revenues crown, and invaded the rights of the A confederacy of the nobles against such favourites was broken by the address of the estates of the most obnoxious baron confiscated, without a legal sentence or their peers; and when to these proceedi authority of the great charter was ol Henry was wont to reply, "Why shoul serve this charter, which is neglected by grandees, both prelates and nobility?" t it was justly returned: "You ought, sir them the example."

So violent an administration as that bishop of Winchester could not be of l ration; yet its fall proceeded from the not from the efforts of the nobles. Edm primate, attended by many other prela presenting the pernicious measures of required the dismission of him, and tha associates, under pain of excommun The menace was too formidable to be neg yet the English were not long free fr dominion of foreigners. The king havir riod Eleanor, daughter of the count vence, was surrounded by a

A. D. 1236. number of strangers from that c whom he enriched by arbitrar tions of prerogative, and by extorting loa his most opulent subjects.

reign enterprises of Henry were equally
ful with his domestic government.
r with Lewis IX. he was stripped of
ained to him of Poicton. His want
ny reduced him to sell his plate and
When this expedient was first proposed
he asked, where he should find pur-
it was replied, the citizens of London.
word," said he, "these clowns, who
to themselves the names of barons,
every thing, while we are reduced to
s."

as the grievances were under which
lish laboured, from the faults of the
y were considerably encreased by the
ns and avarice of the court of Rome.
229, pope Honorius demanded, and
the tenth of all ecclesiastical revenues.
ar 1240, Otho the legate wrested large
m the prelates and convents, and is
have carried more money out of the
than he left; four years after the ex-
was renewed by Mertu the nuncio:
king, who relied on the pope for the
of his tottering authority, dared not re-
exactions.

nt III. was still more rapacious than
his predecessors: by his influence he
mbarked Henry in a project for the
onquest of Sicily; in which chimerical
r expending an immense sum of mo-
king became sensible of the fallacy of
s professions and his own expectations.
of Cornwall the king's brother, who
at this project, was, soon after its de-
elf tempted to become a candidate for

the imperial crown; and succeeded be chosen king of the Romans. P into Germany, he carried with him t sum of seven hundred thousand mar ney while it lasted procured him partisans; but it was soon drained by of the German princes: and he England, mortified at the reflection lavished away the frugality of a wh the acquisition of an useless title.

A.D. 1255. The turbulence of the creased with the wants of th the parliament which seems some authority in this reign, refu unless he would promise, at the sa redress of civil and ecclesiastical and engage from henceforth to great charter inviolate. This he c in the most solemn manner, but m favourites, he soon restored to his us

A. D. 1258. A continuation of such measures encouraged Simo fort, earl of Leicester, to wrest the sceptre from the feeble held it. This nobleman had espou dowager to William earl of Pem sister to the king. His address gai affections of all orders of men, bu protect him against the levity of hi He had alternately enjoyed the been exposed to the hatred of Henry too great to act subservient to the that prince, he found more advanta vating his interest with the public. every place with complaints against n t of the great charter; and a q

ith William de Valence, the king's
r, determined him to give full scope
ounded ambition. He secretly called
of the most powerful barons, particu-
ophrey de Bohun, high constable,
od earl Marischal and the earls of
nd Gloucester. To these he depicted
g colours the oppressions exercised
e lower orders, the violation of the
ivileges, and the continual depre-
de on the clergy; and while he mag-
generosity of their ancestors, who at
ce of their blood had extorted the
ter from the crown, he lamented
degeneracy, who allowed so impor-
lvantage to be wrested from them by
nce, and insolent parasites.

opics being well suited to the senti-
the company, the barons embraced a
of redresssing the public grievances,
into their own hands the adminis-
government. They entered the par-
lad in complete armour, with their
y their sides; and when the king,
ith their unusual appearance, asked,
hey intended to make him prisoner?
Bigod replied for the rest, "That he
eir prisoner but their sovereign; but
l frequently, after acknowledging his
lowed himself to be carried into the
, he must now yield to more strict
s, and confer authority on those who
ing and able to redress the national
s." Henry, partly allured by the
a supply, and partly intimidated at
al appearance of the barons, acqui-

limited authority was granted; an
cester was at the head of this counci
measures were taken by his influe
ordered four knights to be chosen by
ty, who were to report the grievan
people to the parliament; they appoi
sessions of parliament to be held
every year; that a new sheriff shou
nually elected by the votes of the f
in each county; that no heirs should
mitted to the wardships of foreigner
castles intrusted to their custody;
no new warrens or forests should b
nor the revenues of any counties or
be let to farm.

These regulations perhaps might l
warranted by the circumstances of
but they afterwards proceeded to the
justifiable lengths. They displace
chief officers of the crown, and advan

g against them; and whatever support might have derived from the private of their families, was weakened by their ne jealousies. A violent enmity broke tween the earls of Leicester and Gloucester; ter was desirous of moderating the ca- f the barons; but the former, enraged at pposition he met with in his own party, ded to throw up all concerns in English , and retired into France.

e earl of Gloucester dying soon Leicester entered into a confede- with Llewellyn prince of Wales; A. D. 1263.

o sooner did he understand that prince rd had marched to oppose the Welsh, than retly passed over into England, collected ends, and commenced an open rebellion. London he had many partizans; and the lace, encouraged by Thomas Fitz-Richard, ayor, soon rose in insurrection. The lust nder and destruction first prompted them ack the Jews, who were pillaged and mas- d to the number of five hundred persons. Lombard bankers and rich citizens were ext victims to their rapacity; even the scarcely escaped their rage; whom they ded to have removed by water from the r to the castle of Windsor; but the popular vas, "drown the witch!" the multitude bled with large stones on the bridge to er barge; and her fears induced her to n to the Tower.

e earl of Leicester was now not only mas- f London, but in a parley he had seized erson of prince Edward, the life and soul royal party. This misfortune determined

the king to seek an accommodation; he to confirm the provisions of Oxford; ar instated the barons in the sovereignt kingdom. The latter immediately sui a parliament to meet at Westminster in settle their government; and in that they insisted that the authority of the four barons should continue, not only du reign of the king, but also during that Edward. The heir apparent, however recovered his liberty by the late treaty, e his activity in defending the prerogativ family. The number of his friends, and mour of the people for peace, obliged th Leicester to consent to a second nego and it was agreed by both sides to subr differences to the arbitration of the France.

This virtuous prince had never ceas terpose his good offices between the Eng tions; and at Amiens, in the presenc states of France, of the king of Englanc Peter de Montfort, Leicester's son, he this great cause to a trial. He annu provisions of Oxford, restored the kir possession of his castles, and to the noi of the great offices; but he ordered at t time a general amnesty should be grante past offences; and declared that his aw in no wise meant to derogate from the p and liberties which the nation enjoyed former charters. But the sentc rejected by Leicester and his ass and they resolved to have rec arms, in which they were supported by of London.

A. D. 1264.

ıg and the prince finding a civil war
, summoned to their standard their
d vassals; while Leinster having been
l by a great body of Londoners, deter-
stake the fate of the nation on a deci-
ement.

ents for war were displayed in the skill
y of his march; and he had nearly sur-
royalists in their quarters at Lewes in
ut this negligence was repaired by the
f prince Edward, who marshalled the
ıe king. With the van he rushed upon
loners, who from their ignorance of
, and want of experience, were ill fitted
the ardour of Edward and his martial
ns: they were broken in an instant, and
f the field for many miles. But when
returned from the pursuit in triumph,
astonished to find the ground covered
dead bodies of his friends. During his
Leicester had attacked, and defeated
body commanded by Henry and the
the Romans; and had taken both these
risoners. Edward, intrepid amidst the
isasters, in vain exhorted his followers
the death of their friends, and relieve
captives: they were dejected by this
ed reverse of fortune; and the earl of

whose bridges Edward had broken d
to his son Simon de Montfort, to h
London with an army for his relief.
advanced to Kenilworth with that vi
fancying that all Edward's force an
were directed against his father, he
and unguarded; but the prince, mak
den and forced march, surprised
camp, dispersed his army, and took
Oxford and many other noblemen
almost without resistance. Leicester
of his son's fate, passed the Severn in
ing Edward's absence, and lay at E
expectation of being every hour joi
friends from London: when the p
availed himself of every favourable m
peared in the field before him. The b
diately began, though on very uneq
Leicester's army, by living on the m
Wales without bread, which was not

d about an hundred and sixty knights, other gentlemen of his party. The d been purposely placed by the rebels t of the battle; and being clad in ar- thereby not known by friends, he wound, and was in danger of his life: out, "I am Henry of Winchester, your was rescued from impending danger, d to a place of safety.

ory at Evesham proved deci- A. D. ur of the royalists; but they 1266. ith great moderation. The er remained inviolate: and the king l to abstain from all those exertions of ich had afforded so plausible a pre- rebels. His clemency was extended most inveterate enemies; and the earl er, whose youth and temerity prompted ne new disgust, to rekindle the flames n, found a ready pardon in the me- s former services.

dward finding the state of the A. D. lerably composed, was im- 1270. his avidity for glory, and by tions of the king of France, to under- pedition against the infidels in the . He carried with him the earl of : but when he arrived at Tunis, he is had sunk beneath the heat of the d the fatigues of the enterprise. Not d, however, by this event, Edward is voyage, and revived in the Holy lory of the English name.

ile his absence from England was of the most fatal consequences; the not executed; the barons oppressed the

the common people, and the populace don returned to their usual licenciousnes old king, unequal to the burthen of pu fairs, anxiously importuned his gallant return, and to assist him in swaying the At last, overcome by the cares of gove and the infirmities of age, Henry expire Edmond's Bury, in the sixty-fourth yea age, and the fifty-sixth of his reign, leav sons, Edward his successor, and Edmon Lancaster; and two daughters, Margar of Scotland, and Beatrix dutchess of Br

The character of this prince may be su collected from the history of his reign. alternately timid and rash, easy and o ing, avaricious and a spendthrift. On he practised the most cruel extortion seems the profits of usury, which was per cent. enabled them to bear repeated

A. D. 1272. Edward had reached Sicil return from the Holy Land, whe been wounded with a poisoned when he received intelligence of his death. Accompanied by his consort, cess Eleanor of Castile, he proceeded and did homage to Philip, for the don held in France. He then advanced journies to London, where he was rece the most joyful acclamations, and was crowned at Westminster, by Robert a of Canterbury.

To correct the disorders which civi tions had introduced, was the first obj king's care. By a rigid execution of he gave protection to the inferior order and diminished the arbitrary power o

banished the kingdom, and since that
y never have been so numerous in

ve spirit of Edward could not
n without employment. Lle-
nco of Wales, refusing to do
person, Edward, impatient of his eva-
red Wales with a numerous army;
l into the heart of the country; and
d Llewellyn, and the flower of the
the hills of Snowdon; where being
f magazines, he was soon obliged to
at discretion. He did homage, and
is barons to swear fealty to the crown
d; besides relinquishing the country
heshire and the river Conway.
eace, however, was not of long dura-
insolence of the English borderers, pro-
Welsh to rise again in arms; and
e-entered the country with a force too

A. D. 1276.

A. D. 1284. Intimidated by the fate of hereditary prince, the We submitted; and the laws were established throughout the Edward, however, sensible that nothi military glory and virtue so much a poetry, collected the Welsh bards, barbarous policy, caused them to death; an action which reflects eter on his name.

It is said that Edward, in order t himself with the Welsh, proposed t a prince, a Welshman by birth; a promise, he invested in the princip Edward, then an infant, who had b Caernarvon. Thus Wales was fully the crown; and henceforth gives a eldest sons of the kings of England.

A. D. 1291. Edward now had leisure the affairs of Scotland: he c son to Margaret, the heir to crown; but the death of that prince an infant, broke all his measures; cant throne was claimed both by Joh Robert Bruce.

Both had numerous adherents; to prevent a civil war, it was agree in the arbitration of the king of En temptation was too strong for the v ward; he purposed to lay hold of opportunity, to revive, or rather claim of a feudal superiority ov Accompanied by a great army, he Scottish parliament and the comp tend him in the castle of Norham, on bank of the Tweed. He informed

hither to do justice to all parties; and
as entitled to this authority, not in vir-
reference made to him, but in quality
rd of the kingdom.
rons were moved with indignation at
ce of this unexpected claim; but they
mselves betrayed into a situation, in
vas impossible for them to make any
lefence; and Edward interpreting their
to acquiescence, addressed himself to
titors, and previous to his pronouncing
required their acknowledgment of his
.
ing done, Edward after long delibera-
ounced in favour of Baliol; to whom,
ving an oath of fealty to England, he
up the fortresses of Scotland; and if
en satisfied with establishing the supe-
the English crown, he might have fixed
sions, and have left that important ac-
to his posterity; but he proceeded in
anner as made it evident he aimed at
ute dominion of the kingdom. He en-
appeals to England; and obliged king
ppear at the bar of his parliament as a
erson. Gentle as was the disposition
, it was exasperated by these indig-
determined at all hazards to vindicate
es; and the war, which soon broke out
England and France, presented him
vourable opportunity.

y quarrel between a Norman
lish sailor, had been speedily A. D. 1293.
into a national enmity. A
ar had been kindled at sea, in which,
he respective sovereigns had yet taken

no part, so numerous were the fleets e
that fifteen thousand Frenchmen are rep
have perished in one action. The aff
become too important to be neglected;
sent an envoy to demand reparation; wh
being fully accorded, he summoned Ed
his vassal, to attend him in France; an
refusal, declared all his estates in that k
forfeited.

By emptying the jails, Edward raised
which he sent into Guienne; but these
though at first successful, were soon aft
defeated with considerable slaughter; a
land was at the same time menaced wit
vasion from France and from Scotland
kings had entered into an alliance.

A. D. 1295. The union of these princes obli
ward to carry on his preparatio
vigour; and the expences with
they were attended, obliged him to h
quent recourse to parliaments, and to in
into the public council, the lower order
state. Along with two knights of the
enjoined the sheriff to send to parliam
deputies from each borough *; "as it i

* The charges of the deputies were borne by th
which sent them; they sat apart from the k
knights, who disdained to mix with such plebei
ages. After they had given their consent to th
quired of them, they separated, even though the
continued to sit. But in process of time, it be
custom for them, in return for the supplies the
to prefer petitions to the crown, for the redress o
public grievances; and the king, by acceding to
exertion of his authority, bestowed validity on
was soon, however, discovered, that no laws cou
for one order of men without affecting the whol

able rule," says he, "that what concerns should be approved of by all, and common ers be repelled by united efforts." This principle, seems to have laid the foundation free and equitable government; and from epoch may be dated the regular establish- of the different branches of the house of mons, for the precedent of Leicester, in the er reign, was rather an act of violence than thority,

he popular form which Edward had n to the parliament, could not fail A. D. 1296. rocuring him a liberal supply; and pplied it, in making immediate preparations nst the hostilities of his northern neighbours. cited John to appear before him as his vas- and on his refusal, he marched with thirty sand foot, and four thousand horse to chas- his contumacy. Encouraged by the in- ues of Robert Bruce, and several Scottish lemen, he crossed the Tweed, took Berwick ssault, and detached the earl of Warrenne twelve thousand men to besiege Dunbar.

---

e of peers therefore, with reason, expected that their it should be expressly granted to all public ordinances. ith the most frequent partition of property, the knights esser barons gradually sunk to a rank very inferior to great nobility, while the growth of commerce aug- ed the private wealth of the burgesses; it seemed fore no longer unsuitable to unite them together in same house, and to confound their privileges; this t took place about fifty years from the time when esses were first summoned to parliament. Thus the estate of the commons reached its present form; it by degrees to importance; and in its progress made and commerce, the necessary attendants of liberty and l rights, flourish in the kingdom.

The Scots, who attemp
Warrenne, were defeate
thousand men. Dunba
a feeble resistance, the c
Stirling opened their ga
spirit of the nation was
times; and, feeble and t
make his submission, ar
crown into the hands c
marched to Aberdeen
sition; and with his us
gave orders to destroy
preserve the memory of
kingdom. He left ear
Scotland; and carried
liol, who lay two years
submitted to a voluntar
where he died in a priv

Edward was not equ
tinental expeditions. I
had been able to check
Philip, who had made l
St. Omer, Courtray, a
how vain were the hop
penetrating into the hea
narchs were inclined
position engaged them
ferences to the arbitrati

A. D. 1298. This was th pontiffs that ex the temporal ju

* Boniface had issued a bu
paying taxes without his co
this unwarrantable stretch o
ecclesiastical order out of the
these means soon brought th

bitant pretensions, which he had been
) assume from the successful example
ecessors, but of which the season was
l, involved him in so many calamities,
attended with so unfortunate a catas-
it they have been secretly abandoned,
ver openly relinquished, by his suc-
the apostolic chair. Edward and
ially jealous of papal claims, took care
) their reference, that Boniface was
e of their differences by their consent,
e person, not by any right of his pon-
id the pope, without seeming to be
t this mortifying clause, proceeded to
tence between them, in which they
iesced. He brought them to agree
nion should be cemented by a double
that of Edward himself, who was now
, with Margaret, Philip's sister; and
prince of Wales with Isabella, daugh-
monarch. Philip was willing to re-
nme to the English; but he insisted
Scots, and their king John Baliol,
his allies, be comprehended in the
to restored to their liberty. The dif-
on several disputes, was compro-
heir making mutual sacrifices to each

their conduct was very reconcileable to the pri
ciples of an interested policy.

Ill health obliged the earl of Warrenne to
sign the administration of Scotland, into t
hands of Ormesby the justiciary, and Cressi
ham the treasurer. The former distinguish
himself by his severity; the latter had no ot
object than the amassing of money, by rap
and injustice. They treated the Scots as a c
quered people; and in consequence, the brav
and most generous spirits of the nation were
asperated to the highest degree against the E
lish government.

Among these was William Wallace, a
descended from an ancient family, whose
rage prompted him to undertake, and enal
him finally to accomplish the delivery of his
tive country. Finding himself obnoxious to
administration, he had fled into the woods,
offered himself as a leader to those whom t
crimes or bad fortune had reduced to a like
cessity. Endowed with gigantic force of b
with daring valour, and patience to bear h
ger, fatigue, and all the severities of the sea
he began with small attempts, and discov
equal enterprise in annoying the enemy,
prudence in securing his own followers.
who thirsted after military fame, or felt the f
of patriotism, were desirous to partake hi
nown; and his actions seemed to vindicate
nation from the ignominy into which it
fallen by its former tame submission.

The justiciary, and the other officers of
ward, alarmed at his progress, hastily fled
England; while the Scots betook themselv

very quarter. Warrenne, alarmed at gence, shook off his indisposition, and in the north of England an army of sand men, advanced to Stirling, and illace encamped on the opposite banks rth. In his impatience, Warrenne or- army to cross a bridge which lay over ; but when numbers of the English had efore they could be formed, they were y Wallace, and pushed into the stream, ed by the sword. Warrenne retired England; and Wallace, after receiv- his followers the title of guardian, or assed the Tweed, and ravaged the of Durham.

verse hastened the return of Edward iders; and impatient to recover his y in Scotland, he assembled the whole orce of England, Wales, and Ireland, hed with an army of near an hundred men to the northern frontiers.

ots were distracted by faction and ani- The elevation of Wallace was the envy to the nobility; and that hero, f their jealousy, and dreading the ruin atry from those intestine discords, re-

troops entire; and having crossed
he marched leisurely along the b
stream. Young Robert Bruce, g
heir of him who had been compet
throne, who, in the service of Engl
ready given many proofs of his asp
appeared on the opposite bank; and
ing the Scottish chief, addressed hi
and desired a short conference. H
to him the fruitless and ruinous
which he was engaged, and the un
between a weak state, deprived of it
mighty nation conducted by the ab
of the age. If the love of his cou
motive for perseverance, his obst
only to prolong her misery; if h
views to private grandeur, he oug
that so many haughty nobles wou
mit to his rule. To this Wallace
if he had hitherto acted alone as the
his country, it was because no le

rminate when they could be no otherwise pre-
rved, than by receiving the chains of a haughty
ctor. The gallantry of these sentiments roused
e dormant ambition of Bruce; and he secretly
solved to seize the first opportunity of embrac-
g the cause of his oppressed country.

The defeat of Falkirk had not complet- A. D.
the subjection of the Scots. Under 1299.
hn Cummin, who had been chosen re-
ut, they surprised the English army, routed
em after an obstinate combat; extended their
ccesses to the banks of the Tweed; and ren-
red it necessary for Edward to begin anew the
nquest of the kingdom.

That prince prepared himself for the enter-
ise with his usual vigour and abilities; he pe-
trated with a great army from one extremity
f Scotland to the other, and compelled even
ummin himself to submit to his authority.
o make his acquisition more durable, he abro-
ated all the Scottish laws and customs, endea-
oured to substitute those of England in their
lace, and entirely razed or destroyed the monu-
ments of antiquity, and the vestiges of indepen-
dence.

Wallace himself was at last betrayed A. D.
into the hands of the king, by his friend 1305.
ir John Monteith, and Edward, instead
f respecting his bravery and magnanimity, re-
olved to overawe the Scots by an example of
everity. He ordered the hero to be carried in
hains to London; to be tried as a rebel and a
raitor, though he had never sworn fealty to
England; and to be executed on Tower-hill.
uch was the unworthy fate of Wallace, who,
rough the course of several years, with signal
conduc

was not long ere a more fortu
sented himself to conduct them
The conference which Robert I
with Wallace on the banks of t
sunk deep in his mind; and he
revive the pretensions of his fan
to the vacant throne. Edward w
of the spirit and the pretensions
chief; and he ordered his motions
One of the friends of Bruce, antic
yet not daring, amidst so many j
hold any conversation with him
his servants, a pair of spurs, a
gold, which he pretended to l
from him; and left it to his saga
his meaning. Bruce rightly in
allusion, set off immediately,
through cross roads, reached Dum
dale, the chief seat of his family
he found a number of the Scottish
bled, and among the rest, John

and manly deportment, impressed the
of his audience, and roused them to free-
and revenge. Cummin alone, who had
ly taken his measures with the king, set
e them the certain destruction they must
t, if they again shook off their allegiance
victorious Edward. Bruce, apprised of
eachery, and foreseeing the certain failure
his schemes from the opposition of so pow-
a leader, immediately took his resolution.
llowed Cummin, on the dissolution of the
ibly; and as he passed through the cloisters
Gray-friars, he ran him through the body.
e death of Cummin sealed the conspiracy
Scottish nobles. The genius of the nation
d itself. Bruce was solemnly crowned at
e; and attacking with fury the English,
rsed in their quarters, he again expelled
the kingdom. Edward found that the
, twice conquered in his reign, must yet be
h subdued.

effectuate this, he assembled a A. D.
army, and was preparing to enter 1307.
frontiers, when in the thirty-fifth
of his reign, and the sixty-ninth of his age,
nexpectedly sickened, and died at Burgh
e Sands, whence he was removed for inter-
to Westminster Abbey.* With his last
h, he enjoined his son and successor, to
cute the enterprise, and never to desist till
d finally subdued the kingdom of Scotland.

The tomb of Edward I. was opened in 1774, when
dy was found unconsumed. Several monuments of
fection for his queen Eleanor, who died, 1296, at
by in Lincolnshire, still remain in the places where
rpse rested

ham the trea
himself by his
object than t
and injustice.
quered people
and most gene
asperated to th
lish governme
Among the
descended fro
rage prompted
him finally to
tive country.
administration,
offered himself
crimes or bad
cessity. Endo
with daring va
ger, fatigue, a
he began with
equal enterpri
prudence in se

of that faction, was Tho- A. D.
caster, cousin-german to 1308.
nobleman entering the
his adherents in arms, required
of Gaveston; to which Edward
submit; but instead of sending
Gascony, he appointed him lord
land.

rever, unhappy in the absence of
ing contrived to soften some of
barons, ventured to recal Ga-
majority were not swayed by
their leaders. In defiance of the
ng's prohibition, with a nume-
armed followers, they forced
olve for one year, the whole au-
alm on a chosen junto of twelve;
ittee, thus sanctioned, among
is, banished Gaveston for ever
dominions.

wever, did Edward, by retiring
mself out of the terror of the ba-
an he recalled Gaveston; when
voked at this measure, flew to
earl of Lancaster at their head.
d; but the castle of Scarborough,
ft his favourite, was obliged to
earl of Pembroke. From thence
d to the castle of Dedington in
ere being left with a small guard,
d by the earl of Warwick; and
unhappy Gaveston, without any
ws, was struck off by the hands
ier. On the first intelli- A. D.
ath of his favourite, Ed- 1313.
at in his menaces of ven-

geance; but from a natural facility of di
tion, he hearkened to an accommodation
subscribed a general amnesty of all th
passed.

The affairs of Scotland indeed withdr
attention from inferior objects. The prog
Bruce had been rapid; and he closely p
the castle of Stirling, the only fortress i
kingdom which held out for the Engli
relieve which, Edward summoned his
from all quarters, to the number of an hu
thousand men. At Bannockburn, abou
miles from Stirling, Bruce with thirty tho
hardy warriors, inflamed with the love of
pendence, awaited the charge of the enem
hill covered his right flank, a morass hi
and to screen his front he had dug dee
planted them with stakes, and covered
over with turf. The English, confident i
superior numbers, rushed forward witho
caution. Their cavalry was entangled
pits, their ranks were broken, and the S
horse pouring through the openings, sc
on every side slaughter and dismay.
they could recover from their panic, an
appeared to be marching towards them o
left; composed of waggoners, and sumpte
whom Robert had supplied with military
ards. The stratagem took effect: the E
threw down their arms and fled; and wer
sued to the gates of Berwick. Besides an
mable booty, the Scots took many pers
quality prisoners, and above four hundre
tlemen, whose ransom was a new acces
wealth to the victors.

isive battle fixed the throne A. D.
and shook that of Edward. 1315.
of the latter rendered him
e in the eyes of his subjects. Un-
: without a favourite, he had chosen
ser, a young man of high rank, and
, in the room of Gaveston. Spenser
ll the exterior accomplishments of
address, but was neither endowed
nce nor moderation. His father,
the same name, was a nobleman ve-
n his years, and qualified by his wis-
: valour, to have supplied the defects
king and his minion: but Edward's
rendered the name of Spenser odious;
bulent Lancaster and his adherents
ent to achieve his destruction.
n of Spenser to an estate which had
l on the illustrious family of Mow-
he signal for civil war. Lancaster
l of the most potent barons flew to
ravaged the lands of both the Spen-
were then absent on the continent;
extorted from the king an act of at-
inst his favourite, and of indemnity
ves, they disbanded their army, and
security, as they imagined, to their
:les. Edward, however, having as-
army, dropped the mask, reversed
:e, and recalled the Spensers; and
chastise his enemies.
le, Lancaster, having hastily collected
sand men, fled with his troops to-
orth; but being intercepted at Bo-
e, after a short action, was made

like his father, without any appearance of
gal trial, or any real crime being all
against him, except the weak and frivolous
that he was a favourite of the king.

A. D. 1327. The diabolical Isabella, in orde
avail herself of the prevailing delu
summoned in the king's name a p
ment at Westminster. A charge was drav
against Edward, in which, even though fr
by his inveterate enemies, nothing but his
of capacity or his misfortunes, could be obj
against him. His deposition, however, wa
ed by parliament; and the prince his son
placed on the throne.

Hitherto, the queen had been successf
her aims; but the gross violation of every
and every tie, soon estranged from he
minds of men: the proofs which daily brol
of her criminal commerce with Mortime
creased the general abhorrence against her
her hypocrisy, in publicly bewailing with
the king's unhappy fate, was not able t
ceive even the most stupid and most preju
of her adherents. In proportion as the
became the object of public hatred, the de
ed monarch, who had been the victim o
crimes and her ambition, was regarded
pity, with friendship, with veneration; an
became sensible, that all his misconduct,
faction had so much exaggerated, had be
ing to the natural imbecility, not to any
tary depravity, of his character. The
Leicester, now earl of Lancaster, to whos
tody he had been committed, was soon to
with those generous sentiments; and b
using his prisoner with gentleness and hum

as suspected to have entertained still more
rable intentions in his favour. The king,
ore, was taken from his hands, and deli-
over to lord Berkeley, Mautravers, and
nay, who were entrusted alternately, each
month, with the charge of guarding him.
e he was in the custody of Berkeley, at his
in Gloucestershire, he was still treated
the gentleness due to his rank and his mis-
nes; but when the turn of Mautravers and
nay came, every species of indignity was
ised against him, as if their intentions had
to break entirely the prince's spirit, and to
by his sorrows and afflictions, instead of
violent and more dangerous expedients,
ie instruments of his murder. But as this
od of accomplishing his object, appeared
oo slow to the impatient Mortimer, he se-
sent orders to the two keepers, who
at his devotion, instantly to dispatch him.
ig advantage of Berkeley's sickness, A. D.
ose custody he then was, and who 1327.
ereby incapacitated from attending
harge, they came to Berkeley-castle, put
elves in possession of the king's person;
rusting a red hot iron through a horn into
ndament, that no marks of external vio-
might be seen, they put him to the most
le death. The dreadful deed, however,
iscovered to all the guards and attendants
e screams with which the agonizing king
the castle, while his bowels were consum-

e perpetrators of this shocking and almost
rd of crime, in the ensuing revolution
it necessary to fly from the resentment of
their

yet a more innocent and inoffensive
can scarcely be named. To his mildn
and his want of penetration, in choo
capable of guiding the reins of go
which he was incapable of holding hi
misfortunes are principally to be ascri

CHAP. VI.

The Reign of Edward III.

A PARLIAMENT being assembl
of indemnity was passed in favo
who had deposed the late king, and
der against Lancaster and his party be
ed, he was appointed guardian to t
king Edward III. with a council o
consisting of five prelates and seven la

Robert Bruce, king of Scotland, t
clining in health and years, thought t

at length encamped on the southern
ne Were, and though their situation
ageous, he would have hazarded an
is ardour, however, was restrained
he prudence or envy of Mortimer;
it being included in the regency, pos-
aramount authority; and the Scots
emselves of the delay, retired within
erritories; while Edward returned to
ghly incensed against Mortimer for
intment and disgrace he had incurred.
er of Mortimer, indeed, was not only
, but disgusting to every one. Ed-
had attained his eighteenth year,
the fetters in which he was held by
it minister; and with some friends,
a plan to emancipate himself. The
ager and Mortimer lodged in the
ottingham; the king also was admit-
h with a few only of his attendants;
castle was strictly guarded, it became
o communicate the design to sir Wil-
l the governor, who zealously took
By his direction the king's associates
ted through a subterraneous passage:
ner, without having it in his power to
ance, was suddenly seized in an apart-
ining to the queen's. A parliament
liately summoned for his condemna-
such was the notoriety of his infamy,
it trial, or examining a witness, he
ced to be hanged on a gibbet at the
the neighbourhood of London. The
l more guilty than Mortimer, was
by the duty of her son: she was, how-
ned to her own house; and though the
king,

with which he caused justice to be exec
restored the kingdom to internal tr
which allowed him to extend his views
Bruce was no more; and his son Da
nor, found a competitor in Edward
son of John, who had been crowne
Scotland. The pretensions of the l
secretly supported by Edward, who c
a number of the English barons, arr
vassals in his cause. With these al
landed on the coast of Fife, and on
of the river Erne, surprised and de
Scots: twelve thousand of the latter
action, and among these the earl of
regent. The victor immediately m
Scone, and was crowned there with g
while his competitor David sought
France. Not long after, however, B
rienced a sudden and total reverse o
he was attacked by sir Archibald Do

dvanced to the relief of that important
; who relying on their superior number,
d to attack the English at Halidown-hill.
emerity was chastised by a total defeat,
ry little loss on the side of England.
r this fatal blow, the Scottish nobles had
er resource left but submission: Baliol
nowledged king, by a parliament assem-
Edinburgh; the superiority of England
ain recognised, and the gratitude of Ba-
ed Berwick, Dunbar, and all the south-
unties, to be for ever annexed to the Eng-
narchy.

mean and temporizing concession, A. D.
gainst him such a storm of indig- 1334.
and revolt, that Edward found it
ry to prop, in person, the tottering throne
lly. Twice he entered Scotland in arms,
rched without resistance through the low
es, ravaging the estates of those who were
ted to his party. The Scots, however,
by experience, retired into their hills and
es, and waited a favourable moment for
, from the war which was on the point
king out between France and England.
d [illegible] a prevailing opinion A. D.

monarch. Philip was a prince of r
of great experience, and, at that
established character, both for p
valour; and by these circumstance
by the internal union of his peopl
acquiescence in his undoubted rigl
sed every advantage above a raw
raised, to the government of the r
ble and most turbulent subjects in
incident, however, immediately occ
required that Edward should eith
clare his pretensions, or for ever
abjure them. He was summoned t
for Guienne: Philip was preparin
him by force of arms; and Edw
prudent to submit to present ne
over to Amiens; and in a formal d
ledged that he owed liege homag
which was in effect ratifying, an
strongest terms, Philip's title to
that kingdom. His own claim in

the count of Hainault his father-in-law; ing engaged him in his interests, he em- the good offices and counsels of that in drawing into his alliance the other gns of that neighbourhod. The duke of t was induced, by his mediation, and by emittances of money from England, to his concurrence: the archbishop of Co- the duke of Gueldres, the marquis of the count of Namur, the lords of Fau- t and Baquen, were engaged by like s, to embrace the English alliance. These gn princes could supply, either from their ates, or from the bordering countries, umbers of warlike troops; and nothing nting to make the force on that quarter rmidable, but the accession of Flanders; Edward procured by means somewhat dinary and unusual.

Flemings having attained to a superior opulence and refinement, could not longer the vassalage of the feudal institutions. had risen in tumults; had insulted the ; had chased their earl into France; and ing themselves over to the guidance of a us leader, had been guilty of all that in- and disorder, to which the thoughtless raged populace are so much inclined, ver they are unfortunate enough to become wn masters.

ir present leader was James d'Arteville, a in Ghent, who governed them with a absolute sway than had ever been assumed of their lawful sovereigns; and this sedi- radesman, the haughty Edward courted ie most submissive assiduity. D'Arteville,

sensible that the Flemings were natural
ed to the English, and proud of these
from the king, invited him over to
Countries. Edward, after having rec
consent of his parliament, passed over
ders, accompanied by a body of troop
obstacles yet prevented him from ent
action; the vassals of the empire woul
without the direction of the emperor,
maintained the exterior of peace with
and the Flemings pretended the same
with regard to the invasion of their li
The first was overcome by the emperor
ing Edward vicar of the empire; an e
nour, but which served to banish the
the German princes; and to obviate th
Edward, by the advice of d'Artevilie,
the title of king of France. Yet he ven
on this step without hesitation and re
and his mind seemed filled with a pres
calamities which he was about to inflict
tail on both countries.

A. D. 1339. After a vain attempt on C
Edward advanced to the fro
France. He there saw the van
expectations; the count of Namur, and
count of Hainault, his brother-in-law
of being deceived by the new title he h
ed, refused to commence hostilities ag
liege lord, and retired with their troo
king, however, passed the Scheldt, and
near Capelle with fifty thousand me
approached him with an army nearly
number: the English monarch was
engage against so great a superiority; t
king thought it sufficient if he eluded t

dversary; the latter soon reaped the har-
his caution, since the exhausted finances
ard compelled him to disband his army,
it the field.

spirit of Edward, however, was still un-
By confirming the ancient charters,
privileges of boroughs, he obtained from
liament a considerable supply, and with
of 250 sail, he again embarked for the
nt. Near Sluise he was opposed by the
fleet, consisting of 400 ships. The infe-
of the English in number, was compen-
y their nautical skill, and the presence of
nonarch; the encounter was fierce and
; but in the heat of action, the Flemings,
hose coast the French had imprudently
d, issued from their harbours, and oppres-
ir weary adversaries with unexpected fu-
o hundred and thirty of the French ships
aken, and thirty thousand of their best
n perished. So fatal was the loss, that
urtiers of Philip preserved a gloomy si-
and their sovereign was at length inform-
the national calamity by the privileged
of a court fool, or jester.

nbers now crowded to the standard of
rd; and with an army of above an hun-
housand men, he invested Tournay. That
ad been provided with a numerous garri-
out a siege of ten weeks had nearly ex-
d their provisions, when their courage
nfirmed by the march of the French king,
head of a mighty host, to their relief.
atter still declined to hazard his crown in
sive action; and contented himself with
ing succours into Tournay. Both armies

continued in sight of each other wi
ing; and their critical situation i
countess dowager of Hainault, to
good offices, in order to prevent th
blood. This princess was mother-i
ward, and sister to Philip; and her
prevailed on them both, though th
lay aside, at least to suspend their
by subscribing a truce for a twelvem

Edward returned to England deep
at his disappointment; and vented h
on his own officers. In particular
termined to make Stratford, archbi
terbury, whom he had entrusted t
taxes, and whom he accused of l
remiss in his duty, feel the weight o
sure. But that prelate issuing a
tence of excommunication against
the king was glad to be reconciled
to allow him to resume his functions

In order to obtain a new supply f
liament, Edward had been reduced
to nearly the same restrictions as h
posed on Henry III. and Edward
sooner was the money collected, th
ed and annulled his concessions;
by this most unworthy and fraudul
he recovered his authority at home
mortifications he had experienced in
France would probably have influe
drop his claim, had not a revolution
opened to him more promising view

John III. duke of Britanny havi
was solicitous to prevent those disord
on the event of his demise, a dispute
might expose his subjects. His your

he count of Penthievre, had left only one daughter, whom the duke deemed his heir; and as his family had inherited the dutchy by a female succession, he thought her title preferable to that of the count of Mountfort, who, being brother by a second marriage, was the male heir of that principality. He accordingly purposed to bestow his niece in marriage on some person who might be able to defend her rights; and he cast his eye on Charles of Blois, nephew of the king of France. Yet, as he both loved his subjects, and was beloved by them, he determined not to take this important step without their approbation; which being readily obtained, the marriage was concluded; and all his vassals, and among the rest the count of Mountfort, swore fealty to Charles and to his consort, as to their future sovereigns.

But on the death of the aged duke, the ambition of the count of Mountfort broke through all these regulations, and kindled a war, not only dangerous to Britanny, but to a great part of Europe. Sensible that he could expect no favour from Philip, he made a voyage to England on pretence of soliciting his claim to the earldom of Richmond, which had devolved to him by his brother's death; and there, offering to do homage to Edward as king of France, for the dutchy of Britanny, he proposed a strict alliance for the support of their mutual pretensions. Edward immediately perceived the advantages attending this treaty; and it required a very short negotiation to conclude an alliance between two men who, though their pleas with regard to the preference of male or female succession were directly opposite, were intimately connected by their immediate interests.

Soon

A. D. 1342. Soon after this, however, Mor fell into the hands of his enemies conducted as a prisoner to Paris shut up in the tower of the Louvre. B withstanding this misfortune, his party w animated by the manly spirit of his c who, instead of deploring with female we the captivity of her husband, roused the of Britanny to resist an usurper impose them by the arms of France; invested in I bonne, she sustained with undaunted c the assaults of Charles of Blois; and just strength of that city seemed exhausted, capitulation had been proposed, the e countess beheld from a lofty tower the l pected fleet of England steering to her Six thousand archers, with a body of he valry, were immediately landed, under th mand of sir Walter Manny, a brave and enced leader: and Charles of Blois was c led to abandon a siege that was become h

A more ample reinforcement followed the guidance of Robert of Artois; and was successfully attacked. The Breton adhered to Charles, assembled to recov important city; and Robert was compe relinquish his prey, after receiving a which proved mortal. To succour hi Edward, with twelve thousand men, lan Morbien near Vannes, and commenced th important sieges of Vannes, of Rennes, Nantz; but, by undertaking too much, he of success in all his enterprises. The d Normandy, eldest son of Philip, appea Britanny at the head of an army of thousand infantry, and four thousand c

was obliged to concentrate his forces, entrench himself before Vannes, where of Normandy soon after arrived, and ner invested the besiegers. The Eng- p began to be afflicted by famine; and angerous situation, Edward willingly the mediation of two legates from the Rome: he subscribed a truce for three which all prisoners were to be released, s in Britanny to remain with the present rs, and Vannes was to be sequestered hands of the legates, to be afterwards of according to their pleasure.

s not long, however, before Edward pretence for new hostilities. He A. D. ied that some nobles, the parti- 1344. he house of Mountfort, had been l contrary to the articles of the treaty: iament seemed to participate in his re- ts; and granted him liberal supplies for wal of the war. The earl of Derby, English army, passed over to Guienne, at Bergerac the French general the Lisle, reduced great part of Perigord, progress was checked by the duke of dy, at the head of one hundred thou- n, who would probably soon have wrest- the English, all their conquests, had been summoned from improving his ad- s, to another quarter of the kingdom.

ccour the earl of Derby, Edward A. D. ected at Southampton a fleet of 1346. thousand sail, and an army of housand men. He embarked on this ion, with his son the prince of Wales, flower of his nobility; but the winds proving

ters, of importance. Influenced by
derations, Edward ordering his fleet
the Norman coast, safely landed his
Hogue; and immediately spread his
the whole country; defeated a bod
which had been collected for the
Caen, and carried by assault, and
that rich city. He moved next towa
but he found the bridge over the S
down, and the king of France, wh
vered from his surprise, encamped o
site bank with an host of one hundr
men.

Edward perceiving that the Fren
to enclose him in their country, by a
rapid march, gained Poissy, passed
and pressed forward towards Flande
same obstacles presented themselv
Somme: the bridges were either br
or strongly protected; and a numer
ment guarded the northern banks. T

nd with advantage near the village of
drew up his army on a gentle ascent,
ded them into three lines: the first was
ded by the prince of Wales, and under
the earls of Warwick and Oxford; the
Arundel and Northampton were at the
the second line; and he remained with
division himself. His flanks were se-
trenches, and according to some histo-
veral pieces of cannon were placed in

the English, inspired by the skill and
ance of their sovereign, awaited with
omposure the charge of the French, the
urning with resentment, and only afraid
prey should escape them, pressed for-
ithout order or obedience; and they
in presence of the English, imperfectly
and fatigued by their imprudent haste.
st line, consisting of fifteen thousand
cross-bow men, was commanded by
y Doria, and Charles Grimaldi; the se-
is led by the count of Alençon, brother
ng; Philip himself was at the head of
d, accompanied by the kings of Bohe-
the Romans, and of Majorca, with all
lity and great vassals of the crown of

conflict was long and bloody, but the in-
ourage of Edward prince of Wales, who
a stripling, performed prodigies of va-
cided the fortune of the day. The bat-
me, for some time, hot and dangerous;

battle of Crecy began at three o'clock in the af-
and lasted till dark.

and

scene of action. When the mes
him, his first question was, wh
were slain or wounded? On r
swer in the negative, "Return
my son, and tell him that I res
of the day to him: I am confid
shew himself worthy of the ho
hood which I so lately conferre
will be able, without my assi
the enemy." This speech being
prince and his attendants, ins
fresh courage: they made an
doubled vigour on the Frenc
count of Alençon was slain: th
cavalry was thrown into diso
were killed or dismounted; the
rushed into the throng, and
knives cut the throats of all
nor was any quarter given th
victors.

ursuit. The king, on their meet-
the arms of the prince of Wales,
l, "My brave son! persevere in
ble cause: you are my son; for
: you acquitted yourself to-day:
n yourself worthy of empire."
ig was foggy; and as the English
many of the enemy had lost their
ht and in the mist, they employed
to bring them into their power;
n the eminences some French stan-
hey had taken in the battle; and
allured by this false signal were
the sword, and no quarter given
cuse for this inhumanity, it was
he French king had given similar
troops; but the real reason pro-
t the English did not choose to be
with prisoners. In this battle,
a moderate computation, twelve
ch knights, fourteen hundred gen-
thousand men at arms, besides
ousand of inferior rank: many of
nobility of France, the dukes of
Bourbon, the earls of Flanders,
nont, Aumale, were left on the
The kings also of Bohemia and
e slain. The former was blind
t being resolved to hazard his per-
in example to others, he ordered
is bridle to be tied on each side to
two gentlemen of his train; and
and those of his attendants, were
und among the slain, with their
ig by them in that situation. His
e ostrich feathers; and his motto,

"*Ich dien*, I serve:"
and his successors ac
great victory. The
remarkable for the sl
English, than for the
French: there were kil
and three knights, and
common men.

The great prudence of
only in obtaining this m
in the measures which he
elated by his present prospe
pect the total conquest of
of any considerable provinc
ambition to the conquest of
the interval of a few days, w
in interring the slain, he mar
torious army, and presented
place.

John of Vienne, a valiant knig
was governor of Calais, and beir
every thing necessary for defe
raged the townsmen to perform
their duty to their king and coun
therefore, sensible from the beg
was in vain to attempt the place
posed only to reduce it by famine.
employed him nearly twelvemonths
this interval, there passed in diffe
many other events, which in general
to the honour of the English arms.

The Scottish nation, after long
with incredible perseverance, their
against the superior force of the En
called their king David Bruce in 1342.
that prince, neither by his age nor c

em much assistance, he gave
itenance of sovereign authority;
d's wars on the continent proved
on to the force of England, they
alance more equal between the
every truce which Edward con-
hilip, the king of Scotland was
; and when Edward made his
ipon France, David was strongly
is ally to invade the northern
gland. Accordingly David soon
reat army, entered Northumber-
id of above fifty thousand men,
ravages and devastations to the
am. But queen Philippa, as-
ody of little more than twelve
which she entrusted to the com-
Percy, ventured to approach him
Cross near that city; and riding
anks of her army, exhorted every
duty, and to execute revenge on
us ravagers: nor could she be
eave the field, till the armies were
engaging. The Scots were soon
hased off the field: fifteen thou-
were slain; and the king himself
oner, with several of his most dis-
oles.

aving secured her royal tower, crossed the sea to whom she found still en- A. D. 1347.

egge of Calais: after a vain attempt
at the head of two hundred thou-
hilip had been obliged to abandon
ts fate; the inhabitants were re-
ast extremity; but Edward would

only consent to suspend the general on condition that six of the most citizens should atone for the obsti rest, by submitting their lives to h and by presenting, with ropes about the keys of the city. While the wre gazed on each other, lost in despair, St. Pierre, whose name deserves to b offered to encounter death for the s friends and companions. The gen of enthusiasm was soon communicat more intreated to share the glory a ger: they appeared erect and undau the haughty Edward, who at the of his queen Philippa, dismissed wi these gallant citizens.

A. D. 1347. To secure the possession Edward ordered all the na tants to quit the town, anc anew with English; a policy whic secured so long to his successors tha fortress; he soon after, through th of the pope's legates, concluded a France; and on his return, establis der of the Garter. The general ac origin is, that the king's mistress, t of Salisbury, having dropped her ball room, Edward taking it up, ob of the courtiers to smile, upon whi out, "*Honi soit qui mal y pense*, E that evil thinks;" and in memorial o he instituted the Order of the Garte words for its motto.

A damp was thrown over this fe destructive pestilence which invade dom, and is computed to have swep

third of the inhabitants. In London alone, fifty thousand persons are said to have perished. This malady first discovered itself in the north of Asia, and made its devastating progress from one end of Europe to the other; and so grievous a calamity served, more than the pacific disposition of the contracting parties, to prolong the truce between France and England.

During this truce, Philip had paid the debt of nature, and his son John, hitherto known by the title of the duke of Normandy, ascended the throne. His piety and sincerity procured him the surname of "Good;" but he possessed not that masterly prudence which the situation of the kingdom required; and his measures were embarrassed by the intrigues of his kinsman Charles king of Navarre, to whom the epithet of "Wicked" has been with justice affixed, though he possessed talents of the very first order, had they been honourably directed. This prince did not conceal his pretensions, in right of his mother, to the crown of France; and he seduced by his address, Charles, the eldest son of John, who first bore the name of dauphin, to share his councils. But Charles repenting of his folly, revealed the secret to his father; and the king of Navarre with several of his associates were seized at an entertainment at Rouen; some of the latter were immediately led to execution; and the king himself was thrown into prison. A. D. 1350.

This decisive and strictly justifiable step was far from proving advantageous to John. Philip, the brother of the king of Navarre, flew to arms, and implored the protection of England; and as the truce was expired, Edward was at liberty to

afford him assistance. From ravaging Picar the king himself was recalled to check the cursions of the Scots; he laid waste the cou from Berwick to Edinburgh; and Baliol, fin the aversion of his countrymen increase, res ed the crown into Edward's hands, on condi of receiving a moderate pension for life.

A. D. 1355. In the mean time, young Edward companied by the earls of Warwick Salisbury, had anchored in the Son with three hundred sail: being joined by vassals of Gascony, he carried fire and sw throughout Languedoc: in a second campa at the head of twelve thousand men, he p trated into the heart of France; when he alarmed with the unwelcome intelligence the French king was approaching with an a of sixty thousand men.

Near Poictiers, prince Edward prepared battle, with equal courage and prudence; even the most splendid military qualities c not have extricated him, had the French av themselves of their superior numbers, and tented themselves with intercepting his visions. The prince was indeed so sensibl his desperate condition, that he offered to chase a retreat by ceding all his conquests, by stipulating not to serve against Franc seven years; but John required him to surre himself prisoner. This proposal was rejc by the high spirited Edward, who declared England should never be obliged to pay price of his ransom.

All hopes of accommodation being at an the prince of Wales strengthened by new trenchments, the post which he had before s

dicu

nd contrived an ambush of
at arms, and as many archers,
r the command of the Captal
dered to make a circuit, that
the flank or rear of the French
engagement. The van of his
anded by the earl of Warwick,
earls of Salisbury and Suffolk,
y the prince himself.

ranged his forces in three di-
t was commanded by the duke
king's brother; the second by
tended by his two younger bro-
d by the king himself, who had
ilip his fourth son and favourite,
rteen years of age. There was
the English army but through a
covered on each side by hedges;
to open this passage, the mareschals
nd Clermont were ordered to ad-
a separate detachment of men at
le they marched along the lane,
English archers, who lined the
l them on each side with their ar-
eing very near them, yet placed in
, they coolly took their aim against
nd slaughtered them with impunity.
detachment, much discouraged by
combat, and diminishing in their
ived at the end of the lane, where
the open ground the prince of
lf, at the head of a chosen body,
ir reception. They were discom-
erthrown; one of the mareschals
he other taken prisoner: and the re-
tachment, exposed to the shot

of

of the enemy, without being abl
sistance, recoiled upon their own
every thing into disorder. In th
ment the Captal de Buche unexpe
ed, and attacked in flank the d
which fell into some confusion.
denai, and St. Venant, to whom th
young prince and his brothers h
mitted, too anxious for their c
their own safety, carried them off
set the example of flight, which w
that of the whole division. The
leans, seized with a like panic, and
was lost, thought no longer of figl
ried off his division by a retreat
turned into a flight. The divisic
John was still, however, more num
whole English army; and the o
made that day was by his line o
prince of Wales fell with impetu
German cavalry placed in the f
battle ensued: one side was enco
near prospect of so great a victo
was stimulated by the shame of
field to an enemy so much inferior
man generals, together with the d
constable of France, falling in bat
of cavalry gave way, and left the
exposed to the whole fury of the
ranks were every moment thinned
the nobles fell by his side one
his son, scarce fourteen years of a
wound, while he was fighting v
fence of his father. The king
with fatigue, and overwhelmed
might easily have been slain; but e

in, ambitious of taking alive the royal
spared him in the action, exhorted him
der, and offered him quarter. Several
mpted to seize him suffered for their
In this dilemma, he cried out,
is my cousin, the prince of Wales?"
ed unwilling to become prisoner to any
f inferior rank; but being told that the
as at a distance, he threw down his
, and yielded himself, together with his
Dennis de Morbec, a fugitive knight of

noderation which Edward displayed on
sion, has for ever stamped his character.
past which was prepared in his tent for
prisoner, he served behind his chair,
ad been one of his retinue. He refused
himself at table with his majesty; all
r's pretensions to the crown of France
ried in oblivion; and John received,
captive, those honours which had been
im when on a throne.

ce of two years followed the A. D.
Poictiers; and the prince of 1357.
vailed himself of it, to conduct
prize in safety to England. He landed
wark, and was met by a vast concourse
e of all ranks. The prisoner was clad
apparel, and mounted on a white steed,
shed by its size and beauty, and by the
of its furniture: the conqueror rode by
in a meaner attire, on a black palfrey.
tuation he passed through the streets of
and presented the king of France to
r, who advanced to meet him, and re-
ceived

ceived him with the same courtesy voluntarily paid him a visit.

The most horrible anarchy in produced by the captivity of John phin, though endowed with an exc standing, was scarcely eighteen y and had neither experience nor a ficient to defend a state assailed foreign power and domestic faction of Paris were distracted by party h unfrequently polluted with blood cities imitated the example of the soldiers, released from all discipl themselves by plunder and robbe sants rose against their former l their castles, and often massacred with circumstances of incredib Every man was thrown loose and of his fellows; and licentiousness out control.

During the height of the confu had been prevented from pushing by the exhausted state of his finan also flattered himself that he migh solid advantages by negotiating v prisoner, than by arms: John had to restore the provinces which h sessed by Henry II. and his imme sors, and to annex them to Eng any obligation of homage. But and the states rejected his treaty : able; and Edward, on the expi truce, with an hundred thousan crossed the channel.

The French, however, had bee

it induced him to listen to more moderas; and, in a conference between the and English commissioners at Bretigni, was at last concluded on the subsequent s. It was stipulated that king John e restored to his liberty, and should pay nsom three millions of crowns of gold;* of England should for ever renounce to the crown of France, and to the pro- f Normandy, Maine, Touraine, and An- essed by his ancestors; and should receive nge in full sovereignty the provinces of Xaintonge, l'Agenois, Perigort, the Li- Quercy, Rovergue, l'Angoumois, and stricts in that quarter, together with Ca- isnes, Montreuil, and the county of Pon- the other side of France; that Edward renounce his confederacy with the Fle- and John his connexions with the Scots; t forty hostages should be sent to Eng- security for the execution of these con-

and was received with every mark of
Edward; but soon after falling sick,
London.

A. D. 1364. Charles the Dauphin, whc
him, immediately directed hi
to the internal disorders whi
his kingdom. His chief embarrass
ceeded from large bands of military a
who had followed the standard of Ed
who on the conclusion of peace refi
down their arms, persevered in a life
and associated themselves under th
"companions." Their leaders fou
battles with the troops of France; a
little but regular establishments t
come princes. Charles, unable to re
by force, thought of discharging i
countries, this dangerous and intestin

Peter, king of Castile, who deserv
tained the epithet of *Cruel*, had filled

concurrence of his own friends, and
ies of his brother, he had the prospect
and immediate success. The French
rmed with the project, employed du
in negotiating with the leaders of these
The treaty was soon concluded. The
racter of honour which that general
, made every one trust to his promises;
gh the intended expedition was kept a
e *companions* implicitly inlisted under
ard; requiring no other condition before
agement, than an assurance that they
t to be led against the prince of Wales
me. But that prince was then so little
o the enterprise, that he allowed some
n of his retinue to enter into the same

uesclin having completed his levies, led
ross the Pyrennees. The inhabitants of
joined the standard of the count of
mare; and the tyrant, justly odious, and
y deserted, fled from the indignation of
jects, and sought refuge in Guienne.
cited the protection of young Edward,
is father had invested with the sove-
of these conquered provinces, by the title
rincipality of Aquitaine. That prince
garding the fallen monarch with com-
and dreading the powerful confederate
ance might acquire in the new king of
determined to restore Peter; and after
a numerous army, he recalled the *com-*
from the support of Henry. Most of
beyed a voice they were accustomed to
ce; yet Henry, beloved by his new sub
nd reinforced by the king of Arragon,

beheld himself at the head of one
sand men. Du Guesclin, and
rienced generals, would have disst
hazarding an action with Edwa
mer success had inspired his tr
fidence, and his enemies with terr
trusted to his numbers, which t
his adversary; and he venture
the English prince at Nagara.
Henry was routed with the loss
sand men; du Guesclin himself
soner; while only four knights
vates perished on the part of Ed

Castile immediately submitted
once more ascended the throne.
faction which the prince of Wa
in this perilous enterprise, was s
the ingratitude of the tyrant, w
reward which he had promised t
and Edward returned to Guienne,
diminished, and his own constitu
paired by the climate.

The barbarities exercised by
subjects, revived all the animos
tilians: the tyrant was again deth
to death, by his brother, who sea
the throne. The duke of Lanca
son of the king of England, wh
eldest daughter of Peter, inher
empty title of that sovereignty, a
the succession, increased the ani
new king of Castile to England.

Prince Edward, by this rash e
involved himself in so much debt,
it necessary, on his return, to im
taine a new tax on hearths: the pe

re, carried their complaints to
ncient sovereign, as to their lord
ainst these oppressions of the Eng-
t.

ty of Bretigny, Charles had re-
im of fealty over those provinces
propriated to England: but trea-
d when at variance with interest.
d to listen to the complaints of the
ienne, and at length summoned
pear at his court at Paris, and
eeding against his vassals. The
ard was brief: "I will come in-
replied the prince, "but it shall
of sixty thousand men."

mediately fell upon Ponthieu;
hern provinces were invaded by
dukes of Berri and Anjou. In
andos, the constable of Guienne,
another, the captal of Buche,
best officers in the service of
made prisoner. The prince of
ited by disease, was incapable of
horseback, and returning to Eng-
ed the conduct of the war to his
ese were generally unfortunate;
es of losses, Edward was obliged
ruce, after seeing almost all his
sions in France, except
l Bayonne, ravished from A. D. 1370.
s conquests except Calais.

of the king's life indeed corres-
ith the preceding part of it. Be-
of his dominions abroad, he felt
s authority at home. His youth
pied by ambition, but in his age he

leaving a character, illustrious it
nent virtue, and unstained by any
valour and military talents forme
part of his merit: his generosity, h
bility, moderation, gained him th
all men; and he was qualified to t
not only on that rude age in whicl
on the most shining period either
modern history. The king surv
year this melancholy incident: he
sixty-fifth year of his age and th
his reign; and the people were
though too late, of the irreparal
they had sustained.

The English are apt to consider
fondness the history of Edward th
esteem his reign, as it was one of t
most glorious also, that occurs i
The ascendancy which they ther
quire over France, their natural
them cast their eyes on this per

d, by the prudence and vigour of
ration, a longer interval of domestic
anquillity than she had been blessed
y former period, or than she experi-
any ages after. He gained the affec-
great, yet curbed their licentiousness;
and obliging behaviour, his muni-
generosity, made them submit with
his dominion; and his valour and
ade them successful in most of their

On the policy or justice of his
all not enter. The glory of a con-
dazzling to the vulgar, the animo-
ns is so violent, that the fruitless de-
so fine a part of Europe as France,
isregarded by us, and is never con-
a blemish in the character or conduct
ce.

had a numerous posterity by his
lippa of Hainault. His eldest son
roic Edward, who espoused his cou-
ommonly called the "Fair Maid of
ghter and heir of his uncle, the earl
ho was beheaded in the beginning of

By her, the prince of Wales had a
d, who succeeded his grandfather.
nd son of king Edward, was Lionel
rence, who, dying while still young,
ne daughter, married to Edmund
arl of Marche. Of all the family,
ed most his father and elder brother
qualities.

's third son was John of Gaunt, so
the place of his birth: he was created
ancaster; and from him sprang that
ich afterwards possessed the crown.

The fourth son of this royal family w
mund created duke of York; and the fi
Thomas, who received the title of c
Gloucester. By his queen, Edward h
four daughters, who arrived at maturit
who all married.

Under the reign of Edward, the parl
arose to greater consideration than it had
during any former time: and even the h
commons, which, during turbulent and i
periods, was naturally depressed by the
power of the crown and barons, began to
its natural rank in the constitution, an
distinguished by the liberality and wis
its proceedings.

CHAP. VII.

The Reigns of Richard II. *Henry* IV. *and H*

A. D. 1377. RICHARD, the only surviv
of Edward the Black Prin
but eleven years of age when his
father expired; and, as the deceased m
had taken no care to establish a plan of
ment during the minority of his gran
behoved the parliament to supply the
On this occasion, the commons took th
at their requisition, the house of lords ap
a council of nine, to whom they gave a
for a year to direct the public busine
inspect the education of the young prince
administration was conducted entirely
king's name; no regency was expressly
ed; and the whole system was, for some

ther by the secret authority of the
les.

accession of Richard, England was
n many dangerous wars: besides those
ce and Scotland, the pretensions of the
ancaster to Castile, were the source of
with that country: Charles the fifth
d no more; and his son Charles the
a minor; yet, though encouraged by
nstance, the duke of Lancaster con-
nself with ravaging Brittany; while
f Gloucester, with only two thousand
nd eight thousand infantry, pene-
o the heart of France. Such, how-
the caution of the French, that they
o hazard any decisive action; and these
s were only productive of a fruitless
lood and treasure.

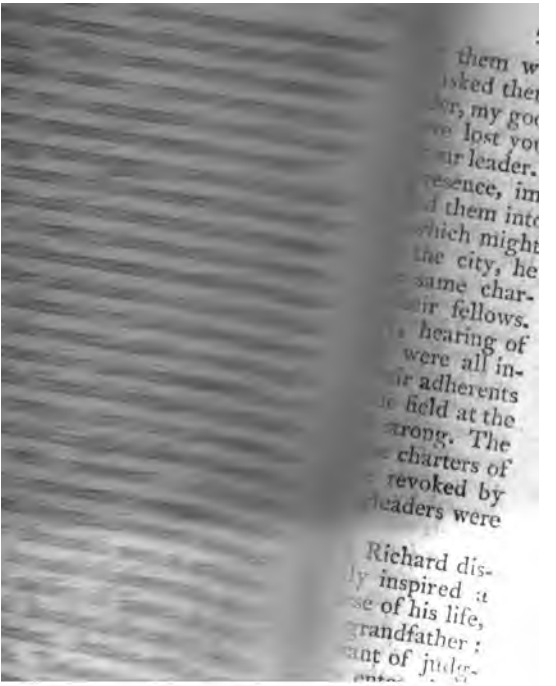
ply the latter, the parliament imposed
of three groats on every person above
ırs of age; but the minds of the popu-
unfavourably disposed for this mea-
l the principles of democracy gaining
ıis distich was frequently in the mouths
ltitude:

ıen Adam delv'd and Eve span,
here was then the gentleman?"

the nation strongly felt the impression
ıgerous question, the tax-gatherers de-
ıt a blacksmith of Essex, payment for
ter, whom he asserted to be under the
ıed by the statute. One of the col-
ering to produce a very indecent proof
ıtrary, laid hold of the maid, which
resenting, immediately knocked out
ı's brains with his hammer. The

scene of action. When the me
him, his first question was, wh
were slain or wounded? On t
swer in the negative, "Return
my son, and tell him that I re
of the day to him: I am confid
shew himself worthy of the ho
hood which I so lately conferred
will be able, without my ass
the enemy." This speech being
prince and his attendants, insp
fresh courage: they made an
doubled vigour on the Frenc
count of Alençon was slain: t
cavalry was thrown into diso
were killed or dismounted; the
rushed into the throng, and
knives cut the throats of all
nor was any quarter given th
victors.

In this bloody and decisive e



cause interested the vicinity; th
arms; and the sedition spread
of Essex, into that of Kent, of E
Sussex, and other neighbouring
leaders assuming the feigned
Tyler and Jack Straw, committe
rageous violence on the gentry an
had the misfortune to fall into the
assembling their followers on Blac
number of an hundred thousand, th
the city, and required of the king
of slavery, freedom of commerc
towns without toll or impost, and a
lands, instead of services of villaina

Though charters to this purpose w
them, parties of the insurgents cont
sult and plunder the capital; and the
ing along Smithfield, very slenderly
met with Wat Tyler, at the head o
and entered into a conference with hi
having ordered his companions to re
should give them a signal, to murd
company, except the king himself, w
they were to detain prisoner, fearles
himself in the midst of the royal ret
there behaved with such insolence,
worth, the mayor of London, in a fi
nation drew his sword, and brought
ground, where he was instantly dis
others of the king's attendants. The
seeing their leader fall, prepared the
revenge; and this whole company,
king himself, had undoubtedly peris
spot, had it not been for an extraor
sence of mind of Richard. Orderin
pany to stop, he advanced alone to

owed him; and having led them into
to prevent any disorder which might
by their continuing in the city, he
dismissed them with the same char-
had been granted to their fellows.
the nobility and gentry, hearing of
danger, in which they were all in-
cked to London with their adherents
rs; and Richard took the field at the
army of forty thousand strong. The
obliged to submit: the charters of
ment and pardon were revoked by
; and several of the ringleaders were
nished.

ress and courage which Richard dis-
this occasion, naturally inspired a
he would, in the course of his life,
ories of his father and grandfather:
dvanced in years, his want of judg-
mper appeared in every enterprise.

his creatures on the one hand, and t
the blood and the chief nobility
The latter directed the house of con
peach Michael de la Pole, earl of
chancellor, a person of the gre
among those who were attached to
Ireland. The king, at first, in hope
their proceedings, retired from the
but this step only served to exaspe
sembly; and Richard, incapable o
consented to return, on condition th
should be made on his other ministe

The French, encouraged by these
and by the absence of the duke o
with the flower of the English milit
prosecution of his vain claim on
tempted the invasion of England
their troops could embark, their fl
persed by a violent storm, and sev
vessels were taken by the English.

For some time Gloucester and l
maintained their recent engageme
king; but they soon directed t
against his dignity, and framed a
by which the sovereign power was
to a council of fourteen persons f
month. Richard, who had just
twenty-first year, signed, but secre
against this commission. His e
was, of itself, sufficiently inclined
means both of recovering his auth
avenging its invasion. But his in
not escaped the vigilance of the du
cester and his adherents; and, to
from executing them, they rapidl
their vassals, and appeared near Hi

wer which Richard and his ministers were able to resist. They now demanded, that duke of Ireland, with several other obnox- persons, should be delivered up to them as tors. The former, after having in vain at- pted to defend himself by arms, fled to the w Countries, where he died a few years after xile. The archbishop of York and the earl Suffolk, who had been impeached with him, e fortunate enough to conceal themselves; sir Robert Tresilian and sir Nicholas Brem- were seized and put to death. Sir Simon ley also, a gentleman who had distinguished self by many honourable actions, and who been appointed governor to Richard, by the ice of the late king and the Black Prince, fell crifice on this occasion: nor could even the en, whose amiable qualities had procured the appellation of the "Good Queen Anne," ain his pardon, though she knelt for three rs before the implacable Gloucester, solicit- this humble boon.

In less than a year, however, it ap- A. D. rs, that Richard regained his autho- 1389. ; though by what means, the imper- t history of this reign does not allow us to cribe. All we know is, that he used it with at moderation; and, though he removed, for me, the duke of Gloucester from his council, never attempted to recal the duke of Ire- l.

oon after this, the duke of Lancaster re- ed from Spain, having resigned all preten- s to the crown of Castile. The authority of prince served to counterbalance that of the e of Gloucester; and Richard, who found his

knight, of Hainault, by whose alli
Gloucester thought the dignity o
much injured. But the king pa
ment, a charter of legitimation t
whom that lady had borne to hi
marriage, and even created the
Somerset.

During these domestic transacti
which Richard had inherited wi
still continued. On the norther
fierce but indecisive action was fo
young Piercy, surnamed, from
valour, "Hotspur," and the earl
The former was taken prisoner, th
Some insurrections of the Irish ob
to make an expedition into that c
he reduced to obedience; and reco
degree, his character for courag
after established a truce of twe
with France; and, to render the

e, by reason of his numerous par-
ould safely be detained in custody.
nent was immediately summoned at
r; and that assembly, in compliance
ishes of the king, passed sentence
duke of Gloucester and his associates,
peared against their sovereign, in an
ner, at Haringay Park. The earl of
as executed, the earl of Warwick ba-
ugh the crime for which they were
had been obliterated by time, and
pardons. A warrant was issued to
reschal, to bring over the duke of
in order to his trial; but the governor
r answer, that the duke had died
f an apoplexy; though it afterwards
that he had been suffocated by the
chard.
destruction of the duke of Glouces-
heads of that party, a rupture en-

exile four years; and he also gr
ters patent, by which he was e
case any inheritance should, in th
crue to him, to enter immediate
sion, and to postpone the doing of
his return. But his jealousy was s
by being informed that Herefor
into a treaty of marriage with th
the duke of Berry, uncle to the
and on the death of the duke
which happened soon after, Ri
his letters patent, and seized th
deceased uncle, Henry of Here
now become duke of Lancaster, a
praises of prudence and penetrati
those of piety and valour. His
tunes were lamented, as if they ha
mon cause; and all men turned
wards him, as the only person who
the lost honour of the nation, w
tarnished by various events.

archbishop of Canterbury and the
rl of Arundel, nephew to that prelate,
t Ravenspur in Yorkshire; and was
ely joined by the earls of Northumber-
Westmoreland, two of the most potent
n England. Here he took a solemn
t he had no other purpose in this inva-
n to recover the duchy of Lancaster,
detained from him; and he invited all
ls in England, and all lovers of their
to second him in this reasonable and
pretension. Every place was in com-
the malcontents in all quarters flew to
nd Henry's army, increasing on every
arch, soon amounted to the number of
usand fighting men.
ake of York, who had been left guardian
alm, but for which he was ill qualified
a dangerous emergency, appointed the
ous of his forces at St. Alban's, and soon
d an army of forty thousand men; but
them entirely destitute of zeal and at-
t to the royal cause, and more inclined
the party of the rebels, he readily lis-
a message from Henry, who entreated
to oppose a loyal and humble suppli-
the recovery of his legal patrimony.
ardian even declared publicly that he
econd his nephew in so reasonable a re-
His army embraced with acclamations
measures; and the duke of Lancaster,

of twenty thousand men: but even this arm
much inferior to the enemy, gradually des
him, till he found that he had not abov
thousand men who followed his standard.
sible of his danger, he privately fled to the
of Anglesea, where he purposed to embar
ther for Ireland or France, and there awai
favourable opportunities which the return c
subjects to a sense of duty, or their future
contents against the duke of Lancaster, w
probably afford him. From this asylum he
drawn by the treachery of the earl of N
umberland, who, with the strongest profes
of loyalty and submission, made himself m
of the king's person, and carried him to hi
my at Flint Castle. Richard was conduct
London by the duke of Lancaster, who was
received with the acclamations of the mut
populace; and, issuing writs of election i
king's name, he appointed the immediate m
ing of a parliament at Westminster.

It is natural to suppose, that the house of
mons, elected during this universal ferment
triumph of the Lancastrian party, would b
tremely attached to that cause, and rea
record every suggestion of their leaders.
ignorant of this, the duke of Lancaster b
to carry his views to the crown itself. He
extorted a resignation from Richard; but
knew this deed would appear the result of f
he purposed, notwithstanding the danger c
precedent to himself and his posterity, to
him solemnly deposed in parliament, fo
pretended tyranny and misconduct. A ch
consisting of thirty-three articles, was acc
ingly drawn up against him, and, though

were frivolous, or had been sanctioned
ustom of his predecessors, both houses
iament seem to have received them with
al approbation. One man alone, the
of Carlisle, had the courage, amidst this
l disloyalty, to appear in defence of his
py master. His generous magnanimity,
ver honourable to himself, was of no ser-
o the unfortunate monarch; and his free-
instead of being applauded, was not even
ated: he was arrested by the order of the
e of Lancaster, and sent prisoner to the
ey of St. Alban's.

This severity put an end to the debate: the
rges were voted against Richard; and voted
nimously by the same peers and prelates,
o a little before had voluntarily authorized
se very acts of violence, of which they now
nplained. That prince was deposed by the
frages of both houses; and the throne being
w vacant, the duke of Lancaster stepped forth
d having made the sign of the cross, pro
unced these words, which we shall give in th
ginal idiom and orthography:

"In the name of Fadher, Son, and Ho
ost, I Henry of Lancaster challenge t
wme of Ynglande, and the croun, with all t
embres, and the appurtenances; als I t
descendit by right line of the blode com
the gude king Henry therde, and thr
it right that God of his grace hath sent
th helpe of kyn, and of my frendes to rec
the which rewme was in poynt to be or
default of governance, and ondoying
de laws."

The earl of Northumberland made a r
the house of peers with regard to the ur

all commerce with his friends a
Kings seldom long survive their
historians, however, differ with r
manner in which he was murdered
the prevailing opinion, that sir Pie
others of his guards, fell upon hin
of Pomfret, where he was confi
patched him with their halberts.
probable that he was starved to de
for after his body was expo
A. D. 1400. no marks of violence wer
it. He died in the thirty-f
his age, and the twenty-third of h
ing no posterity, either legitima
timate.

Richard appears to have been
for government; less for want of
than of solid judgment and a go
He was violent in his temper; p
expence; fond of idle show and g

on those principles which had universally
or certain and undisputed during so
es. Wickliffe himself, as well as his
who received the name of Wickliffites
rds, was distinguished by a great aus-
manners; and his tenets, derived from
ch into the scriptures, were nearly the
th those which were propagated by the
s in the sixteenth century. As for him-
seems not to have been actuated by the
enthusiasm; and in all examinations he
ined away his doctrine by tortured mean-
to render it quite innocent and inoffen-
ost of his followers imitated his cautious
ion, and saved themselves, either by re-
ns or evasions. He died of a palsy in
1385, and though the clergy took care
the people of his eternal damnation, his
s still gathered strength in England, and
ven transplanted to Bohemia; but the
wever strongly disposed to receive them,
ripe for this great revolution.

was the religious state of England,
lenry the fourth ascended the throne;
attention to establish himself in it, left
le leisure for theological inquiries, and
him to court the assistance of the

s very first parliament, he had reason to
danger attending that station which he
umed, and the obstacles which he would
ith in governing an unruly aristocracy,
divided by faction, and at present in-
with the resentments consequent on such
convulsions. The peers, on their assem-
broke out in such violent animosities against

house, by noblemen who gave mut
and *liar* and *traitor* resounded fr
The king, however, had so r
with these doughty champions, a
effusion of blood; but he was n
them to a proper composure, or
amicable disposition among them

Not long after, the earls of
and Huntingdon, and lord Spe
now degraded from the respecti
bemarle, Surrey, Exeter, and C
ferred on them by Richard, ent
spiracy, together with the earl o
lord Lumley, for raising an insu
seizing the king's person at W
treachery of Rutland warded
Henry suddenly withdrew to L
conspirators, who came to Wind
of five hundred horse, found th
their aim, and exposed themselv
ruin. Henry appeared next da
upon Thames, at the head of tw
men; and his enemies, unable to
er, dispersed themselves, with a
their followers in the several c
they had most interest. But th
the king were hot in the purs
where opposed themselves to
The earls of Kent and Salisbury
Cirencester; and were next day
out farther ceremony. The citi
treated Spencer and Lumley in
ner. The earl of Huntingdon
Blount, and sir Benedict Sely, wh
ken prisoners, suffered death, wi

quarters of these unhappy men were
London, no less than eighteen bi-
thirty-two mitred abbots joined the
and met them with the most indecent
joy and exultation. The earl of Rut-
seducer and betrayer of his associates,
meant to bid defiance to decency and
, appeared, carrying on a pole the
rd Spencer, his brother-in law, which
ed in triumph to Henry, as a testimony
alty.

d not escape the sagacity of Henry,
igh the execution of these conspirators
m to give security to his throne, the
s which remain after such bloody
e always dangerous to regal authority.
fore determined not to increase by any
s enterprise the numerous enemies with
was every where environed. While a
he was believed to have adopted the
s of the Lollards; but on the throne
sacrificed his principles to his interest;
gratify the vengeance of the church on
ponents, he procured a law from the
nt, which enacted, that when any here-
relapsed, or refused to abjure his opi-
as delivered over to the secular arm by
ops, he should be committed to the
the civil magistrate. This dangerous
lid not long remain unemployed; and
Sautré, rector of St. Osithes in London,
een condemned by the convocation of
ury, atoned for his reputed heresy, by
the punishment of fire.

he utmost prudence could not shield
rom those inquietudes which assailed
him

being found necessary, was called
the two kingdoms; and Henry w
these means, to turn his attention to

Owen Glendour, descended fro
princes of that country, had beco
on account of his attachment to Ric
sequence of which, lord Grey, a n
nected with the new king, had sei
but Glendour recovered possession
Welsh armed on his side; a long
war was kindled; and as Glendo
devastations on the estate of the ea
who had the best pretensions to th
Edmund Mortimer, uncle to that
out the retainers of the family again
chieftain. His troops were rout
earl himself, still in his minorit
prisoner, and out of jealousy, suffer
in captivity.

The critical situation of Henry
the Scots to make incursions into E
to chastise them, the king conducte
ers without opposition to Edinbur
ing the Scots would neither submit
battle, he returned in three weeks, a
his army. In the following yea
earl of Douglas, at the head of twe
men, made an irruption into Engla
mitted devastations on the northe
On his return home, he was over
Piercies at Homeldon, on the bor
land, and a fierce battle ensued, wh

totally routed. Douglas himself was taken
ner, as was Mordac earl of Fife, son of the
of Albany, with many others of the gentry
obility.

e obligations which Henry had owed to
umberland were of a kind the most likely
duce ingratitude on the one side, and dis-
t on the other. The sovereign naturally
e jealous of that power which had advan-
m to the throne; and the subject was not
satisfied in the returns which he thought
at a favour had merited. Though Henry,
accession, had bestowed the office of con-
on Northumberland for life, and conferred
gifts on that family, these favours were
ed as their due; the refusal of any other
t was deemed an injury. The impatient
f Harry Piercy, and the factious disposi-
the earl of Worcester, younger brother
thumberland, inflamed the discontents of
bleman; and the precarious title of Hen-
pted him to seek revenge, by overturning
rone which he had at first established.
ered into a correspondence with Glen-
he gave liberty to the earl of Douglas,
ade an alliance with that martial chief; he
up all his partisans to arms; and such
ed authority at that time belonged to the
amilies, that the same men, whom a few
efore he had conducted against Richard,
llowed his standard in opposition to Hen-
Then hostilities were ready to commence,
mberland was seized with a sudden ill-
Berwick; and young Piercy taking the
nd of the troops, marched towards
bury, in order to join his forces with those
of

gagement; and scarcely shall w
in those ages, where the shock v
and more constant. Henry ex
in the thickest of the fight: 1
whose military achievements w
renowned, and who here perfor
in arms, signalized himself in
trious degree, and even a wou
ceived in the face with an arro
lige him to quit the field. 1
that fame which he had acq
bloody combat; and Douglas,
my, and now his friend, still a
amidst the horror and confu
This nobleman performed feats
are almost incredible; but whil
contending in this furious man
Piercy, by an unknown hand,
tory, and the royalists preva
said to have fallen that day, o

nd recovered from his sickness, than he
fresh army, and was on his march to
son; but being opposed by the earl of
rcland, and hearing of the defeat at
ury, he dismissed his forces, and came
small retinue to the king at York. He
d that his sole intention in arming, was
te between the parties; and Henry, who
with great lenity to most of the insur-
ought proper to accept the apology, and
d him with forgiveness.

arl of Northumberland, though he had
rdoned, knew that he should never be
he therefore formed a new confederacy
nction with the earl of Nottingham, son
uke of Norfolk, and the archbishop of
rother to the earl of Wiltshire, whom
when duke of Lancaster, had beheaded
ol: but some of the principal confede-
ing betrayed into the king's hands, and
leath, before the plan was ripe for exe-
the valiant Piercy, on receiving this intel-
fled into Scotland, together with lord
; and the king, without opposition, re-
ll the castles and fortresses belonging to
oblemen. He thence turned his arms
Glendour, over whom his son, the prince
s, had obtained some advantages: but
my, more troublesome than dangerous,
nd means of defending himself in his
es, and of eluding, though not resisting,
force of England. In a subsequent cam-
the earl of Northumberland and lord
, impatient of their exile, entered the
n hopes of raising the people to arms;
nd the country in such a posture, as ren-

dered

dered all their attempts unsucces
mas Rokesby, sheriff of Yorkshir
forces, attacked the invaders at
gained a victory, in which both
land and Bardolf were slain.
joined to the death of Glendo
pened soon after, freed Henry fr
mestic enemies; and this pri
mounted the throne by such unju
and held it by such an exceptional
valour, prudence, and address,
tained a greater ascendant over hi
most of his predecessors could ho

About the same time, another
peculiarly favourable to Henry.
king of the Scots, was a prince of
city; his brother, the duke of Alba
more abilities but less integrity,
the government of the state. An
crown, he had already laid viol
David, the eldest son of the king
the life of James the younger, t
barked him for France. The ve
by the English; and though the
truce between the kingdom, Henr
of every law of honour and justi
restore the prince. The shock wa
the feeble constitution of Robert;
the duke of Albany continued t
kingdom, but was held in dependen
who had it in his power to restore
whenever the posture of his affairs

With a design to weaken the
the earl of Marche, Henry had p
tlement of the crown on himself
male; but the long contests wi

yed the injustice of the Salic laws; and
ment, apprehensive that they had violated
rinciples of the English government, ap-
with such earnestness for a new settlement
Henry yielded to their request; and agreed
succession of the princesses of his family.
though the commons shewed a laudable
or liberty in these transactions, their ef-
against the church were still more extraor-
y. In the sixth of Henry, being required
ant supplies, they proposed in plain terms
king, that he should seize all the tempo-
s of the church, and employ them as a
tual fund to serve the exigencies of the
They insisted, that the clergy possessed
d of the lands of the kingdom; that they
ibuted nothing to the public burdens; and
heir riches tended only to disqualify them
performing their ministerial functions with
r zeal and attention. The king, however,
uraged the application of the commons;
the lords rejected the bill which the lower
had framed, for stripping the church of
venues.

e commons, not discouraged by this repulse,
eleventh of the king returned to the charge
more zeal than before: they made a calcu-
of all the ecclesiastical revenues, which,
heir account, amounted to four hundred
eighty-five thousand marks a year, and
ined eighteen thousand four hundred
ghs of land. They proposed to divide this
erty among fifteen new earls, one thousand
undred knights, six thousand esquires, and
ndred hospitals; besides twenty thousand
s a year, which the king might take for

dex , and they insisted, that the cl
could be better performed than a
fifteen thousand parish priests, p
of seven marks a piece of yearly st
T. application was accompanied with a
dress for mitigating the statutes enacted a
the Lollards. To this unjust and chim
proposal, the king gave a severe reply; a
ther to satisfy the church, and to prove th
was zealous in support both of its tem
and spiritual rights, he ordered a Lollard
committed to the flames.

Such are the principal events of this bus
active reign. The king was so much emp
in defending his crown that he had little l
to look abroad. His health declined some m
before his death, and though he was in the f
of his age, his end was visibly approac

A. D. 1413. He expired at Westminster, in the sixth year of his age, and the thirt of his reign; leaving four sons, I his successor, Thomas duke of Clarence, duke of Bedford, and Humphrey duke of cester; and two daughters, Blanche marr the duke of Bavaria, and Philippa to the of Denmark.

Henry IV. possessed a remarkable com of temper; his courage, both military and tical, was without blemish; and he poss many qualities which fitted him for so h station, and which rendered his usurp though pernicious in aftertimes, rather sa during his own reign, to the English nati

The situation of the deceased monarc so infected him with jealousies, that he regarded with distrust his eldest son, an

car

ly excluded him from public business. ctive spirit of the prince, however, re- d from its proper exercise, broke out into igancies of every kind. He indulged in e, and in riot; and associated with the worthless companions. There remains a on, that, when heated with liquor and jol- e scrupled not to attack and plunder the gers in the streets and highways. This e dissoluteness was not less disagreeable father, than would have been his applica- business; and Henry, in his son's beha- dreaded the same neglect of decency id proved so fatal to Richard. But the was less severe in the judgment on the prince: they observed in him the seeds of sity, spirit, and magnanimity; and there ied an incident which more clearly deve- his real character. A riotous companion prince's had been indicted before Gas- , the chief justice, for some disorders; enry was not ashamed to appear at the th the criminal, in order to give him coun- e and protection. Finding that his pre- did not overawe the chief justice, he pro- to insult that magistrate on his tribunal; ascoigne, mindful of the dignity of his

of the future reign nowise disagre
nation; and the first steps taken b
prince confirmed all those preposse
tained in his favour. He called
former companions, acquainted the
intended reformation, exhorted ther
his example, but strictly inhibitec
they had given proofs of their sinc
particular, from appearing any mor
sence; and then dismissed them
presents. The wise ministers of his
had checked his riots, were received
marks of favour and confidence; a
justice himself, met with praises ir
proaches for his past conduct, and v
to persevere in the same rigorous a
execution of the laws. The surpr
who expected an opposite behaviour,
their satisfaction; and the chara
young king appeared brighter th
never been shaded by any errors of c

But Henry was anxious not only
misconduct, but to make amends f
ries into which policy had betraye
He received the earl of Marche, w
courtesy and favour; he restored tl
Piercy to its fortune and honours; a
to bury all party-distinctions, he re
nit alone in his promotions.

The Lollards, however, who were
creasing, were doomed to feel his ri
head of this sect was sir John Oldcastl
ham, a nobleman who had acquired
both of the late and present king.
character pointed him out to the ar
Canterbury, as the proper victim of e

: he applied to Henry for a permission
t him; that prince, averse to sanguinary
s, endeavoured by a conversation with
n, to reconcile him to the catholic faith.
wever, found him firm in his opinions;
king's principles of toleration could car-
no farther. He abandoned him to the
ent of the church; and Cobham was in-
by the primate and his suffragans, and
ndemned to the flames for his erroneous
He escaped from the Tower, and his
spirit, provoked by persecution and sti-
l by zeal, prompted him to the most
l enterprises. He appointed a general
ous of his party, in order to seize the
of the king, and to put their religious
to the sword; but the design was be-
to Henry; and his vigilance prevented
ts. It appeared a few only were in the
of these some were executed; Cobham
had fled, and was not brought to justice
years after, when he was hanged as a
and his body burnt on the gibbet.
hough the nation was not yet sufficiently
ned to receive the doctrines of Wickliffe,
nation in discipline was generally desired:
e parliament that was summoned imme-
after the detection of Cobham's conspi-

Charles the sixth, king of Franc
ministation of that country had disc
symptoms of genius and spirit;
happy prince being seized with an
order, his judgment was gradually
impaired. The administration of af
puted by his brother, Lewis duke of
his cousin-german, John duke of
the people were divided between th
ing princes; and the king, now re
dropping his authority, kept the v
cided, and prevented any regular
the state by the final prevalence of

At length, the dukes of Orleans
dy, seeming to be moved by the
nation and by the interposition
friends, agreed to bury all past qu
livion, and to enter into strict amity
before the altar the sincerity of thei
the priest administered the sacran
of them: but all this solemn pre
only a cover for the basest treacher
deliberately premeditated by the d
gundy. He procured his rival t
nated in the streets of Paris; and b
in his baseness, he embraced a re
more criminal and more dangerou
by openly avowing and defending

The princes of the blood combin
young duke of Orleans and his b
all the violence of party rage, mad
duke of Burgundy; and the un
seized sometimes by one party, s
the other, transferred alternately
appearance of legal authority. T
were laid waste by mutual depre

kingdom was distinguished into two
:tions.
vantage which might be derived from
actions was plainly perceived in Eng-
Henry, before he had recourse to
avoured to obtain his ends by negoti-
ccordingly he sent over ambassadors
fering a perpetual peace and alliance;
nding Catherine, the French king's
in marriage, two millions of crowns
ion, one million six hundred thousand
ears of king John's ransom, and the
possession and full sovereignty of
y, and of all other provinces which
avished from England by the arms of
gustus; together with the superiority
y and Flanders. The terms offered
nch court, though much inferior, dis-
nsciousness of their miserable situation.
e willing to give him the princess in
to pay him eight hundred thousand
resign the entire sovereignty of Gui-
to annex to that province the coun-
Perigord, Rovergue, Xaintonge, the
is, and other territories.
however, rejected these conditions:
g assembled a great fleet and army at
ton, he came to the sea side with the
f embarking on his expedition; and
the aid of the duke of Burgundy, who
tly solicited his alliance, he put to sea
housand men at arms, and twenty-
sand foot, landed at Harfleur, and
hat city, after a resolute defence, to

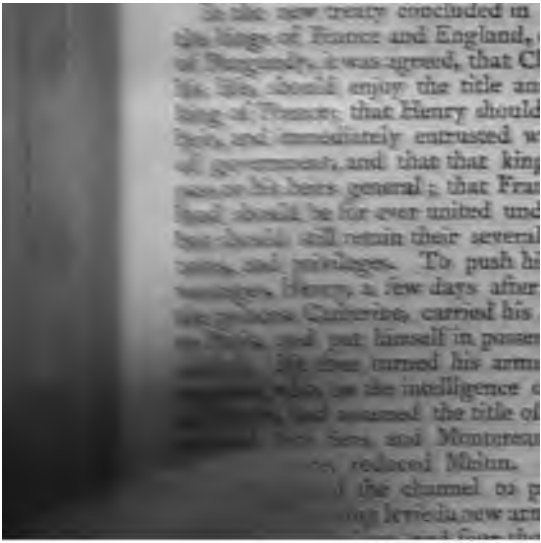
time, a French army of fourteen thou-
sand

Burgundy, fixed the seat of her independe dence at Troyes; and sanctioned by her the enterprises of her new ally against the ters of her son, who, she asserted, detair royal consort in captivity.

A. D. 1418. Henry the fifth had landed a Normandy, and reduced that ferti vince to his obedience. Lisle one of the captains of the duke of Bur suddenly presented himself before the g Paris; was admitted into the city, by th tiality or treachery of a burgher; and l an insurrection of the people, in which t son of the king was seized, and the co Armagnac, the chancellor, and the princi herents of the Orleans party, were inhu massacred. The dauphin himself escape difficulty, through the vigilance and add Tannigue de Chastle; and rejecting the tations of his mother to return to Paris, s himself within the walls of Poictiers.

The king of England, with an army st to open resistance, had already shaken th of Rouen. Yet Henry was sensible wh stacles still remained for him to surr he had already experienced the difficul procuring supplies from the English parli and his coffers were exhausted by a suc of victories. However flattering the pr might be to his ambition, his policy in him gradually to lessen his demands he fixed, as the price of peace, his ma with the princess Catharine, and all th vinces ceded to Edward the third by the of Bretigny, with the addition of Norr which he was to receive in full and intire

y. Isabella, insatiate of revenge a
ersonal enemies, instantly closed w
proposed. But the duke of Burgundy
sitated to subscribe a treaty so pernicious
country, and pressing his negotiations
the dauphin, consented to an accommo-
to rescue his country from destruction.
interview was appointed between the two
s at the bridge of Montereau-sur-Youne;
o sooner was the duke of Burgundy in
power, than the attendants of the dauphin
d him with numerous wounds. His friends,
shed and incapable of resistance, were
taken prisoners, or involved in his fate.
e youth of the dauphin had made it doubt-
hether he was admitted into the secret;
he deed was committed under his eye;
n his more mature years he distinguished
arks of affection and confidence the perpe-
rs of the flagitious action. The bands
vil society were loosened by the royal
ple; and the flames of war, which might
been extinguished, or their fury at least
ged, broke forth with an increase of vio-
Isabella, loud in her complaints, and
ient for vengeance, instantly bestowed the
of Catherine on Henry, and celebrated
nuptials at Troyes in Champagne. Philip,
n of the duke of Burgundy, and who suc-
d to the honours and dominions of his
r, joined the English standard, and only
ated the marriage of his sister with the
of Bedford, the brother of Henry, and the
ription of his father's assassins. The city
ris, long partial to the house of Burgundy,
n arms, and filled every street with scenes



this aid ineffectual, Henry had, in his
r expedition, carried over the king of Scots,
he obliged to send orders to his country-
to leave the French service; but the Scot-
eneral replied, that he would obey no com-
which came from a king in captivity.
troops, therefore, continued still to act
the earl of Buchan; and were employed
e dauphin to oppose the progress of the
of Clarence in Anjou. The two armies
ntered at Baugé: the English were de-
; the duke himself was slain by a Scotch
t, who commanded a company of men at
and the earls of Somerset, Dorset, and
ngdon, were taken prisoners. This was
st action that turned the tide of success
t the English; and the dauphin, that he
both attach the Scotch to his service,
ward the valour and conduct of the earl
chan, honoured that nobleman with the
of constable.

submission of Dreux; and at the request of the Parisians besieged Meaux, which held out eight months, when it surrendered; and Henry immediately commanded the governor to be suspended from a neighbouring tree.

Soon after, intelligence arrived that queen Catherine was delivered of a son at Windsor. The event was celebrated by equal rejoicings at Paris and at London; the royal infant, who was baptized by the name of his father, Henry, was considered as the successor to both kingdoms, and seemed to extinguish even the hopes of the dauphin. That prince, chased beyond the Loire, deserted entirely by the northern provinces, destitute of treasures and troops to oppose his prosperous competitor, prepared to meet with fortitude the destruction which it seemed impossible to avoid; when he was preserved by one of those vicissitudes in mortal life, which often baffle the plans of the most profound policy, and decide the fate of empires.

Henry had determined to open the ensuing campaign with the invasion of Picardy, and appeared in the field early in the month of July. The united forces of the English and Burgundians threatened to overwhelm all opposition; but amidst the pride of victory, and the prospect of dominion, he was attacked by a complaint, which the ignorance of the age rendered mortal. A fistula, with which he was seized, soon terminated in a mortification; and Henry, sensible of his approaching end, devoted, with manly firmness, the few remaining moments of life to the concerns of his kingdom and his family, and to the pious duties of religion.

A. D. 1422.

the duke of Bedford, his elder brother, he
he regency of France; that of England he
nitted to the duke of Gloucester, his younger
ier; and to the earl of Warwick he entrusted
nportant care of his son's person and edu-
n. He intreated these noblemen to con-
to his infant offspring the fidelity and at-
nent which he himself had always experi-
l from them.

ter this settlement of his temporal affairs,
ying monarch assiduously applied himself
devotions, and declared his serious inten-
when he had completely subdued France,
ive marched against the infidels, and at-
ted the recovery of the Holy Land. Con-
by this pious resolution, with the calmest
uillity, he expired in the tenth year of his
, and the thirty-fourth of his age.

e abilities of Henry the fifth were
ly distinguished in the field and the
et; and while we admire the bold-
of his enterprises, we cannot refuse our
to the skilful manner in which they were
ted. His affability attached his friends
service; his address and clemency van-
his enemies. The unceasing attention
he paid to the administration of [illegible]

A. D. 1422.

feriority, possessed some advantages which to turn the scale. He was the true and und heir of the monarchy; and all Frenchme knew the interest, or desired the indepe of their country, turned their eyes towar a' their sole resource. Though only in his tieth year, he was of the most friendly a nign disposition, of easy and familiar m and of a just, though not of a very vigor derstanding. The love of pleasure oft duced him into indolence; but amidst irregularities, the goodness of his hea shone forth; and by exerting at interv courage and activity, he proved that his ness proceeded not from habitual errors fects.

The resentment of the duke of Bur against Charles still continued; and the d Bedford, that he might corroborate n connections by private ties, concluded h marriage with the princess of Burgundy, had been stipulated at the treaty of Arras

While the vigilance of the duke of B was employed in gaining or confirming l alliances, he did not overlook the state of remote countries. The duke of Albany, of Scotland, had expired; and his power h volved on Murdac, his son, a prince of a understanding and indolent disposition. ardour of the Scots to serve in France, Charles treated them with great distinctio where the regent's brother enjoyed the d of constable, broke out afresh; and new su daily exported, and filled the armies French king. The duke of Bedford, the ssuaded the English council to form a

ith James their prisoner; to free him from
ty, and to marry him to a daughter of
l of Somerset, and cousin of the young
Murdac, tired of his station, entered sin-
into the treaty; and for a ransom of forty
id pounds, the king of Scotland was re-
to the throne of his ancestors.

these negotiations succeeded the opera-
war. Charles, still desirous of employ-
enemies in the provinces north of the
contested every castle with politic obsti-
He had been lately reinforced by num-
the Scots; and John Stuart, constable of
id, with the lord of Estissac, had formed
ge of Crevant in Burgundy. The earls of
ry and Suffolk marched to its relief: the
rs were routed, with the loss of above a
nd men; and the constable of Scotland,
he count of Ventadour, were taken pri-

nwhile, the duke of Bedford was engaged
siege of Yvri in Normandy; and the go-
, finding his resources exhausted, had
to surrender the town, unless relieved by
in day. The king of France, hoping, by a
ful enterprise, to restore the lustre of his
and to preserve Yvri, collected with dili-
an army of fourteen thousand men, of
one half were Scots; and entrusted it to
our and experience of the earl of Buchan,
ble of France, who had already distin-
d himself by the defeat of the duke of
ce. That general, however, arrived too
succour Yvri, which had already opened
tes; but he immediately invested Ver-
nd carried it without difficulty. He had

scarce

scarce time to secure this conques
informed of the approach of the
ford. A council of war was imme
bled to determine what conduc
pursue. In vain did the mo
French officers remonstrate on t
of hazarding an army, the last re
king: the Scots rejected with co
dignity of retiring before the I
opinions were espoused by the
sumptuous; and it was finally re
the arrival of the duke of Bedfor

The armies which encountered e
Verneuil, were equally balanced in
bers. The earl of Buchan resol
with patient firmness the charge
but his measures were disconcert
patience of the viscount of Narbo
bloody conflict, the French being
sides, began gradually to retreat
treat was soon changed into a tum
Four thousand of their bravest sol
earls of Buchan and Douglas, the
male, Ventadour, and Narbonne, l
field. The victors, however, pu
triumph at the expence of sixteen h
a loss so unusual, that the duke of
had all rejoicings for his success.

The destruction of Charles now
evitable; and from the danger whi
to overwhelm him, he could onl
the dissensions of his enemies, whic
for him, rose to a height that
despair.

Jaqueline, heiress of Hainault
had espoused John, duke of Br

) the duke of Burgundy. The marriage
dictated by policy; but the masculine
brilliant capacity of the princess de-
r ill-sorted consort, equally feeble in
mind. Contempt was soon the parent
hy; and impatient of the dilatory mea-
doubtful determination of the court of
ie escaped into England, and solicited
tion of the duke of Gloucester. The
s passions of that prince blinded him
e interests of his country; the charms
nheritance of the countess, presented
s to his view; and without any farther
, he entered into a marriage contract
ieline, and immediately attempted to
mself master of her dominions.
uke of Burgundy resented the injury
) his kinsman, the duke of Brabant;
ength, openly declared in his favour,
hed troops to his support. The quarrel,
first was political, soon became per-
d the duke of Gloucester still persisting
ıg the war in the Low Countries, the
, instead of improving the victory of
was obliged to cross the seas to Eng-
: he might try, by his counsels and au-
) check the mad career of his brother.
nd the English ministry distracted by
the bishop of Winchester, to whom the
ie king's education was entrusted, had
disputes with his nephew the pro-
nd the duke of Bedford was obliged to
ie authority of parliament to reconcile
'he rivals swore to bury all quarrels in
and time also seemed to open expe-

dients

dients for composing the difference wit
duke of Burgundy.

The pope having declared the contract
between Humphrey of Gloucester and Jaq
the duke, despairing of success, married a
lady, who had lived some time with him
mistress. The duke of Brabant died soon
and his widow, before she could recover
sion of her dominions, was obliged to c
the duke of Burgundy her heir, in ca
should die without issue, and to promise
to marry without his consent. But the
tage which the latter prince reaped fr
accommodation of these differences, did n
vent him in future from regarding the E
with jealousy; and the satisfaction which
gent enjoyed from reconciling one ally, wa
alloyed by the unexpected desertion of th
of Brittany and the earl of Richemont,
joined the standard of their legitimate sov
Charles the seventh.

A. D. 1426. During these political manœuv
English army of three thousand
under the command of the earl o
wick, had formed the siege of Montarg
that place was reduced to the last extr
Charles collected a body of sixteen hundre
and entrusted them to a natural son of tha
of Orleans, who had been assassinated
duke of Burgundy. This general, wh
afterwards so famous under the titles of E
of Orleans, and Count of Dunois, attac
enemy's entrenchments, and compelled th
lish to abandon the siege with disgrace.

The duke of Bedford, indignant at t
give

tion of the duke of Brittany, on his arrival
ice, had secretly assembled a considerable
to chastise the desertion of that prince,
ldenly invading the province, unprepared
istance, compelled its sovereign to re-
his alliance with France; and to yield
e to Henry for his duchy. Successful in
rprise, he entered on another equally im-
, and determined to invest the city of
s. The army destined for this siege, con-
of ten thousand men, he entrusted to the
abilities of the earl of Salisbury; while,
other hand, Charles reinforcing the gar-
nd replenishing the magazines, appointed
rnor the lord of Gaucour, a brave and
nced officer.

after the siege commenced, the A. D.
Salisbury was killed by a cannon 1428.
a spirited and successful attempt
fortifications. The command, on his
devolved on the earl of Suffolk. The
as reinforced by large bodies of the French
urgundians; and Orleans under his di-
s was completely invested. The incle-
of the season, and the rigour of the win-
ld not overcome the perseverance of the
rs; a chain of forts was arduously con-
d; yet the vacant spaces still allowed
rs to be introduced; and the garrison, be-
e return of spring, was swelled by fre-
supplies from twelve hundred to three
d men; while their hopes were raised,
ir efforts encouraged by the presence and
le of the Bastard of Orleans.

der to distress the besiegers, the French
vaged and exhausted the adjacent coun-
d the English were compelled to draw

 their

of France,
the preservation of the
of troops, in number about four the
pointed the count of Clermont to comm
On the approach of the French, Fal
up his men behind the waggons, a
received the fury of their charge. T
were broken by their own impetuosit
hundred perished on the field.

Frustrated in his attempt to reli
by arms, the king of France now e
to preserve it by policy. The duke
still a prisoner in England, had obt
the duke of Gloucester, and his coun
nuse of a neutrality in his demesnes
they should be sequestered during t
the hands of the duke of Burgundy: b
edient was firmly rejected by the duke
and to the importunities of the duke o
he coolly replied, "he was not in a hu
the bushes, whilst others ran away wit
this refusal. Baroun

fortunes, and restore him to the
his ancestors. In the village of Dom-
r Vaucoleurs, on the borders of Lor-
a small inn, resided a female servant
an D'Arc; who having been accus-
ride the horses of her master's guests
, acquired a degree of boldness above
and listened with pleasure to the tale of
achievements, which were then the ge-
pics of conversation.
imagination being gradually heated with
citals, she was soon inflamed with the
of avenging on the English the misery of
e. Accordingly, she procured admission
dricourt, the governor of Vaucoleurs; and
red to him, that she had been exhorted by
ent visions and distant voices, to achieve
eliverance of her country. The governor,
r equally credulous himself, or sufficiently
rating to foresee the effect such an enthu-
might have on the mind of the vulgar,
ted her an escort to the French court, which
at time resided at Chinon, in Touraine.
1 her arrival, she is said to have distin-
ied Charles from his courtiers, though di-
d of every ensign of royalty; to have re-
d a secret to him, unknown to all the world
e himself; and to have demanded and de-
d by particular marks, a sword which she
which she required as the
instrument

ministers p...
with scrupulous exact...
length to be convinced of the sincer
clarations, and of her supernatural
their opinion was solemnly and pu
tenanced by an assembly of doctors
gians, and by the parliament of F
residing at Poictiers.

In order to avail himself of the e
the moment, Charles sent Joan to
a convoy was already provided for
Orleans, and an army of ten thousa
collected to escort it. The holy m
ing in her hand a consecrated bann
at the head of her troops. She had
clared her intention of entering th
road from the side of Beausse; but
of Orleans, count of Dunois, prevail
approach the town on the opposite
Loire, where he knew the besiegers

The English had at first heard w

ction, beheld the ...
silent astonishment and religious a...
usiasm of Joan, however, could not
ed within the walls of Orleans: she
he garrison to listen to her voice, and
r example. In a successful sally, the
nents of the besiegers were stormed.
l sally swept away the forts on the op-
le of the Loire; and a wound from an
erved rather to inflame than damp the
of the intrepid heroine. The count of
consented to seize the moment of return-
rtune; the English were successively
from their posts, with the loss of above
usand men; and the French, animated by
st essay of the holy maid, prepared to im-
their advantage, and avail themselves of
perstitious terrors of their adversaries.
th six thousand select troops, the earl of
k had retreated to Jergeau: he was at-
l there by the French, commanded by Joan;
ace was obstinately defended; but the Eng-
vere at length overpowered, and Suffolk
bliged to yield himself prisoner. The re-
ler of the English army under the conduct
lstoffe, Scales, and Talbot, were pressed
e constable Richemont; they were over-
at the village of Patay; and, oppressed by
fears, they never stood the charge of the
Falstoffe himself, who had so lately
... to fly: two thousand
of

of the English were slaughtered; and both S and Talbot were made prisoners.

The maid of Orleans, who had fulfilled of her promise, was now determined to co the king to receive the crown at Rheims. city itself lay distant from any place possess Charles; it was in the hands of the English the whole road which led to it was occupi their garrisons. Yet Joan insisted on th cution of her mission; the king himself sho his general indolence, and resolved to follo exhortations of his warlike prophetess; t bility of France crowded to the standard o youthful sovereign, who began his march head of twelve thousand men; and passing out interruption through an enemy's co received in his progress the submission of T was instantly admitted into Rheims; and i city was solemnly inaugurated. The cl Charles from his coronation at Rheims, re new lustre; and many towns in the neigl hood, disputed the honour of first acknow ing the authority of their lawful sovereign

A. D. 1430. The character of Bedford was displayed to more advantage amidst these storms of adversity. reinforced the garrisons of the different t replenished their magazines, and overaw inclinations of the inhabitants, ripe for r The Parisians were retained in obedience ternate caresses and menaces; and hi soothed the angry passions of the duke of gundy, and deferred the fatal hour of hi defection. Harassed by the vigilance of t gent, the army of France, which had been posed chiefly of volunteers, at length disba

Cl

d himse
ed to B
sixth
f his coro
h of allegiance
the authority of the

onation of the infant
cause, the regent ex-
id advantage from an
ter took place. Joan
t with the inauguration
r mission expired; and
ter having fulfilled her
former condition. The
horted her to persevere,
ually expelled. Overcome
ie had thrown herself into
that time was besieged by
y, assisted by the earls of
In a sally, she was de-
ls, probably out of envy,
ed by her enemies, after a
as taken prisoner.
ord purchased from John of
whose hands she had fallen,
ve, and commenced a prose-
which, whether undertaken
venge, stains with barbarity
character. She was accused
ty, idolatry, and magic. She
ulous charges with heroic firm-
s already prejudged; her reve-
ared to be the inventions of the
the people; and she was sen-
at in the market-place of Rouen.

The

triumphed in repeated encounte
success was ensured by a ruptur
dukes of Burgundy and Bedford.
friendship had been loosened by th
duchess of the latter: and the for
ed, that the memory of his sister
by the hasty marriage of the regen
line of Luxemburg. All advan
reconciliation were disdained by
equally tenacious of their dignity
availed himself of the discontent
Burgundy to negotiate the celeb
since known by the name of the tre

A. D. 1435. Soon after this transacti
of Bedford expired, a pri
virtues, and whose memo
tarnished by the execution of the
leans. After his death, the gov

arles the seventh. Lord Willoughby, glish garrison of fifteen hundred men, himself for some time in the Bastile; our and skill only served to procure tulation, by which he was allowed ops a free passage to Rouen.

years the duke of York struggled difficulties of his situation; and be- by the valour of lord Talbot, after- ed earl of Shrewsbury, he performed ant, but indecisive actions. At last , weary of hostilities, seemed desirous nd they set on foot negotiations for e. But the proposals of France, and ds of England, were still so wide of , that all hope of accommodation y vanished. The English ambassa- ided full and entire restitution of all ces which had once been annexed to ogether with the final cession of its district: the French offered only ienne, part of Normandy, and Ca- l with the usual burthen of homage. l in vain to continue the negotiation, was so little prospect of agreement. h were still too haughty to stoop ast hopes which they had formerly ; and the French had gained too to hope the acquisition of more.

tivity of five princes of the blood, ners in the battle of Agincourt, was ble advantage which England long r its enemy; but this superiority was *y lost.* Some of these princes had *had been* ransomed; and the duke of most powerful among them, was

triumphed in repeated encount
success was ensured by a ruptu
dukes of Burgundy and Bedford.
friendship had been loosened by t
duchess of the latter; and the for
ed, that the memory of his siste
by the hasty marriage of the rege
line of Luxemburg. All advan
reconciliation were disdained b
equally tenacious of their dignit
availed himself of the discontent
Burgundy to negotiate the cele
since known by the name of the tr

A. D. 1435. Soon after this transact
of Bedford expired, a pr
virtues, and whose mem
tarnished by the execution of th

arles the seventh. Lord Willoughby, glish garrison of fifteen hundred men, himself for some time in the Bastile; our and skill only served to procure itulation, by which he was allowed oops a free passage to Rouen.

years the duke of York struggled difficulties of his situation; and be- l by the valour of lord Talbot, after- ted earl of Shrewsbury, he performed iant, but indecisive actions. At last s, weary of hostilities, seemed desirous nd they set on foot negotiations for se. But the proposals of France, and ds of England, were still so wide of , that all hope of accommodation ly vanished. The English ambassa- nded full and entire restitution of all ces which had once been annexed to together with the final cession of its district: the French offered only uienne, part of Normandy, and Ca- d with the usual burthen of homage. d in vain to continue the negotiation, e was so little prospect of agreement. sh were still too haughty to stoop ast hopes which they had formerly ; and the French had gained too to hope the acquisition of more.

tivity of five princes of the blood, oners in the battle of Agincourt, was ble advantage which England long er its enemy; but this superiority was *ly lost.* Some of these princes had *had* been ransomed; and the duke of e *most* powerful among them, was

deed dispelled, but the tide of fort
tinued to flow rapidly against them
triumphed in repeated encounter
success was ensured by a rupture
dukes of Burgundy and Bedford.
friendship had been loosened by th
duchess of the latter; and the form
ed, that the memory of his sister
by the hasty marriage of the regen
line of Luxemburg. All advanc
reconciliation were disdained by
equally tenacious of their dignity;
availed himself of the discontent o
Burgundy to negotiate the celeb
since known by the name of the tre

A. D. 1435. Soon after this transactio
of Bedford expired, a prin
virtues, and whose memor
tarnished by the execution of the
leans. After his death, the cou
was distracted by the rival parties

e difficulties of his situation; and be-
d by the valour of lord Talbot, after-
ıted earl of Shrewsbury, he performed
liant, but indecisive actions. At last
es, weary of hostilities, seemed desirous
and they set on foot negotiations for
ɔse. But the proposals of France, and
nds of England, were still so wide of
ɛr, that all hope of accommodation
ɛly vanished. The English ambassa-
anded full and entire restitution of all
nces which had once been annexed to
together with the final cession of
d its district: the French offered only
Guienne, part of Normandy, and Ca-
ed with the usual burthen of homage.
ed in vain to continue the negotiation,
re was so little prospect of agreement.
lish were still too haughty to stoop
vast hopes which they had formerly

had so long oppressed them with
deed dispelled, but the tide of f
turned to flow rapidly against the
triumphed in repeated encount
success was ensured by a rupt
dukes of Burgundy and Bedford.
friendship had been loosened by
duchess of the latter; and the fo
ed, that the memory of his siste
by the hasty marriage of the reg
line of Luxemburg. All adva
reconciliation were disdained b
equally tenacious of their objec
availed himself of the discontent
Burgundy to negotiate the cel
since known by the name of the C

A. D. 1435. Soon after this transac
of Bedford expired, a p
virtues, and whose mem
tarnished by the execution of t

arles the seventh. Lord Willoughby,
glish garrison of fifteen hundred men,
himself for some time in the Bastile;
our and skill only served to procure
itulation, by which he was allowed
oops a free passage to Rouen.

years the duke of York struggled
difficulties of his situation; and be-
l by the valour of lord Talbot, after-
ted earl of Shrewsbury, he performed
iant, but indecisive actions. At last
s, weary of hostilities, seemed desirous
nd they set on foot negotiations for
se. But the proposals of France, and
ds of England, were still so wide of
, that all hope of accommodation
y vanished. The English ambassa-
nded full and entire restitution of all
ces which had once been annexed to
together with the final cession of
l its district: the French offered only
uienne, part of Normandy, and Ca-
d with the usual burthen of homage.
d in vain to continue the negotiation,
was so little prospect of agreement.
sh were still too haughty to stoop
ast hopes which they had formerly
l; and the French had gained too
to hope the acquisition of more.
tivity of five princes of the blood,
oners in the battle of Agincourt, was
ble advantage which England long
er its enemy; but this superiority was
ly lost. Some of these princes had
had been ransomed; and the duke of
most powerful among them, was
the

the last that remained in the hands of th
lish. He offered the sum of fifty-four th
nobles for his liberty; and when this pr
was laid before the council of England, th
of the duke of Gloucester opposed it, a
of the cardinal of Winchester, supported
zeal. The party of the latter, as usua
vailed; and the duke of Orleans was re
after a melancholy captivity of twen
years.

A. D. 1440. The sentiments of the cardina
after prevailed in another more e
point. That prelate had always
raged every proposal of accommodatio
France, and had represented the utter in
bility of pushing farther the conquests
kingdom; but the duke of Gloucester, hi
rited and haughty, and educated in th
pretensions which the first successes of l
brothers had rendered familiar to him,
not endure these humble counsels. Th
ence of his rival, however, turned the
and the earl of Suffolk, who adhered
cardinal's party, was dispatched to Tc
negotiate with the French ministers. As
found impossible to adjust the terms of a
peace, he concluded a truce for twen
months; and proceeded to the execution
ther business, which seems to have been
implied than expressed in his commission.

As Henry advanced in years, his ch
developed itself. He was found to be
most harmless, simple manners, but of th
slender capacity. Hence it was easy to
that his reign would prove a perpetual mi
As he had now reached the twenty-third

was natural, however, to think of
nim a queen. The duke of Glouces-
ed a daughter of the count of Armag-
the cardinal and his friends cast their
Margaret of Anjou, daughter of Reg-
lar king of Sicily, Naples, and Jerusa-
rincess accomplished both in person and
f a masculine spirit and enterprising
and which had even become auspicious
rivacy of her father's family. The earl
lk, in concert with his associates of the
council, made proposals of marriage to
ret, which were accepted. But this no-
, besides pre-occupying the princess's
, by being the chief means of her advance-
endeavoured farther to ingratiate himself
ner and her family, by very extraordinary
ssions. Though Margaret brought no
y with her, he ventured, of himself, without
direct authority from the council, but pro-
r with the approbation of the cardinal and
uling members, to engage, by a secret ar-
that the province of Maine, which was at
time in the hands of the English, should
ded to Charles of Anjou, her uncle, who
prime minister, and favourite of the French
and who had already received from his
er the grant of that province as his appa-

e treaty of marriage was ratified in
and: Suffolk obtained first, the title
rquis, then that of duke; and even
ved the thanks of parliament for his service
ncluding it. The princess fell immediately
close connection with the cardinal and
, who, fortified by her powerful patronage
resolv

A. D. 1443.

resolved on the final ruin of the duke
cester.

This generous prince, ill suited for
trigues, but possessing, in a high de
favour of the public, had already recei
his rivals a cruel mortification, which it
possible a person of his spirit and h
could ever forgive. His duchess, the
of Reginald lord Cobham, had been ac
the crime of witchcraft, under the prete
there was found in her possession a wax
of the king, which she and her assoc
Roger Bolingbroke a priest, and one
Jordan of Eye, melted in a magical m
fore a slow fire, with an intention of
Henry's force and vigour waste away
insensible degrees. The accusation
calculated to affect the weak and credul
of the king, and to gain belief in a sup
age; and the duchess was brought to
her confederates. A charge of this
nature, seems always to exempt the
from observing the rules of common
their evidence: the prisoners were pr
guilty; the duchess was condemned to
penance, and to suffer perpetual impri
while her reputed associates in the ide
were put to death.

Having proceeded to such unpa
lengths, the cardinal and his party wer
it was necessary to destroy a man w
had already so deeply injured. In or
fect this purpose, a parliament was s
to meet, not at London, which was wel
to the duke, but at St. Edmundsbury.
as Gloucester appeared, he was accuse

own into prison: he was soon after
n his bed; and though it was pre-
is death was natural, and his body
rks of outward violence, no one
he had fallen a victim to the ven-
enemies.

e is said to have received a better
an was usual in his age;* and to
ore free from credulity than his con-
of which the following instance is
Thomas More. There was a man
ed, though born blind, that he had
sight by touching the shrine of St.
e duke, happening soon after to pass
uestioned this person, and seeming
s story, asked him the colours of
s, worn by persons of his retinue,
ld them very readily. "You are
ied the prince; "had you been born
uld not so soon have learned to dis-
ours:" and immediately ordered
in the stocks as an impostor.

inal of Winchester died six weeks
hew, whose murder was universally
him as well as to the duke of Suf-
hich, it is said, gave him more re-
last moments, than could naturally
from a man hardened, during the
long life, in falsehood and in poli-
share the queen had in this guilt, is
her usual activity and spirit made
onclude, with some reason, that the

---

cewise the patron of learned men, and laid
n of one of the first public libraries in Eng-
d.

duke's enemies durst not have ventured on
a deed without her privity. But there ha
ed, soon after, an event, of which she an
favourite, the duke of Suffolk, bore inconte
the whole odium.

The article of the marriage treaty, by v
Maine was to be ceded to Charles of Anjou
hitherto been kept secret; but as the cou
France insisted on the performance of it, o
were dispatched to Surienne, governor of I
to surrender that place. The governor,
tioning probably the legality of the order, re
to comply until he had sustained a siege
the count of Dunois. When reduced to
tulate, he retired with his garrison to
Normandy; but the duke of Somerset, to v
the provinces of France, still occupied b
English, were entrusted, refused to admit
This military adventurer immediately dire
his march towards Brittany, exacted con
tions from that province: the duke of Bri
complained of this violence to the king of Fr
his liege lord; and Charles remonstrated
the duke of Somerset, who replied, that t
jury was done without his privity, and th
had no authority over Surienne and his co
nions. Though this answer was plausible, Cl
never would admit of the apology. He
insisted that these plunderers should be rec
and that reparation should be made to the
of Brittany for all the damages which h
sustained; and, in order to render an accom
dation absolutely impracticable, he estim
the loss at no less a sum than one million six
dred thousand crowns.

Sensible of the superiority which the pr

ıbitants of Normandy opened A. D.
s as soon as the French appeared 1448.
ɛm. The duke of Somerset, so
having an army which could take the
relieve these places, was not able to
ıem with the necessary garrisons and
s. He retired, therefore, with the few
which he was master, into Rouen; and
t sufficient, for the present, if he could
t capital from the general fate of the
. The king of France, at the head of a
le army, fifty thousand strong, pre-
mself before the gates: the dangerous
of revolt had affected the inhabitants;
called aloud for a capitulation. So-
ınable to resist, at once, both the ene-
hin and from without, purchased a re-
Harfleur by the payment of fifty-six
crowns, by engaging to surrender
Tancarville, Caudebec, Honfleur, and
ıces in the higher Normandy, and by
g hostages for the performance of ar-
The governor of Honfleur refused to
orders; upon which the earl of Shrews-
ıo was one of the hostages, was detained
; and the English were thus deprived
ıly general capable of recovering them
eir present distressed situation. Har-
le a resolute defence under sir Thomas

or rather skirmish, was the only by the English for the defence of in France, which they had purch expence of blood and treasure. up in Caen, without any prospect it necessary to capitulate: Fala gates, on condition that the earl should be restored to liberty: a the last place in Normandy whi the hands of the English, bein the conquest of that important speedily finished by Charles.

A like rapid success attended t in Guienne; no resistance was ma and the English were expelled in from a province which they had three centuries. One feeble ef made to recover it; and though concluded, the war seemed to be from the continent the attention was recalled to their domestic con

d the earl of Cambridge, beheaded in the
of Henry V. had transmitted her latent,
ot yet forgotten, claim to her son, Richard
of York. This prince, thus descended by
other from Philippa, only daughter of the
of Clarence, second son of Edward III.
ntly stood in the order of succession before
ing, who derived his descent from the duke
ancaster, third son of that monarch; and
laim could not, in many respects, have
into more dangerous hands than those of
uke of York. Richard was a man of va-
nd abilities, of prudence and mildness: he
njoyed an opportunity of displaying these
s in his government of France; and though
ed from that command by the intrigues and
ior interest of the duke of Somerset, he had
very successful in Ireland; and had even
able to attach to his person and family the
nation, whom he was sent to subdue. In
ght of his father, he bore the rank of first
e of the blood; and by this station he gave
re to his title derived from the family of
imer, which, however, had been eclipsed
e royal descent of the house of Lancaster.
ossessed an immense fortune from the union
many successions, those of Cambridge and
on the one hand, with those of Mortimer
e other: which last inheritance had before
augmented by an union of the estates of
nce and Ulster with the patrimonial pos-
ns of the family of Marche. The alliances
f Richard, by his marrying the daughter
alph Nevil, earl of Westmoreland, had
y extended his interest among the nobility,
ad procured him many connexions in that

ong the rest, he was nearly allied
Warwick, commonly known, fi
quent events, by the appellation of t
maker. This nobleman had distinguish
elf by his gallantry in the field, the hosp
of his table, by the magnificence, and su
e by the generosity of his expence, and h
spirited and bold manner which attende
in all his actions. The undesigned fran
s and openness of his character rendered h
quest over men's affections the more certa
less than thirty thousand persons are said
ve daily lived at his expence; and his mu
cence and hospitality, with the multitude
is retainers, distinguish him as the last of th
nighty barons who formerly overawed
crown.

But though the duke of York had numer
and powerful partisans, his chief depende
was on the discontents which universally
vailed. The people repined at the loss of
provinces in France; and this made them
der queen Margaret as a French-woman,
latent enemy to the kingdom. But the
fatal blow given to the popularity of the
of Lancaster, was the assassination of
tuous duke of Gloucester: by this crime th
ing family suffered a double prejudice
deprived of its firmest support, and it w
ed with the infamy of that barbarous m

The earl of Suffolk was known to
an active hand in the crime, and the
which rose against him as a minister
vourite of the queen, were thereby r
dangerous height. The necessities of
had impelled him to many arbitrary

and the commons, provoked by his imprudence, and challenging an inquiry into his conduct sent up an impeachment against him to the house of peers. As Suffolk seems to have been a bad man as well as a bad minister, it is probable many of the alleged charges would be proved against him, though he made a resolute defence. The court, alarmed at the prosecution, fell on an expedient to save him from present ruin. The king summoned all the lords, spiritual and temporal, to his apartment: the prisoner was produced before them, and asked what he could say in his own defence? He denied the charge, but submitted to the king's mercy: Henry expressed himself not satisfied with regard to the first impeachment for treason; but in consideration of the second, for misdemeanors, he declared, that, by virtue of Suffolk's own submission, not by any judicial authority, he banished him the kingdom during five years. The lords remained silent; but as soon as they returned to their own house, they entered a protest, that his sentence should nowise infringe their privileges; and that, if Suffolk had insisted upon his right, and had not voluntarily submitted to the king's commands, he was entitled to a trial by his peers.

It required little penetration to guess, that these irregular proceedings were meant to favour Suffolk, and that, as he still possessed the queen's confidence, he would, on the first favourable opportunity, be restored to his country, and be reinstated in his former power and credit. A captain of a vessel was therefore employed by his enemies to intercept him in his passage to France: he was seized near Dover, his head struck off on the side of a long-boat, and

and his body thrown into the sea. Such
imbecility of the government, that no
was made after the actors and accom
this atrocious deed of violence.

The duke of Somerset now rose as a r
and favourite; and as he was the perso
whom the French provinces had been l
public, who always judge by the ever
made him equally the object of their an
and hatred with his predecessor. The
York was absent in Ireland during all the
actions; and, however much he might
pected of influencing late events, the jea
the court was not yet awakened again
popular prince.

The humours of the people, howeve
set afloat by the parliamentary impea
and by the fall of so great a favourite s
broke out in various commotions, whi
soon suppressed; but an insurrection in
was attended with consequences, that
to be regarded. One John Cade, a n
Ireland, of low condition, who had b
liged to fly into France for his crimes, or
turn to England, observing the discont
the people, availed himself of them, to
a plan at once original and daring. H
the name of John Mortimer; intending
supposed, to pass himself for a son of
Mortimer, who had been sentenced to d
parliament, and executed in the begin
this reign, without any trial or evidence,
upon an indictment of high treason pr
against him.

On the first mention of that popular
the common people of Kent, to the nu

and of sir Humphrey [illegible]
ted and slain in an action near Seven-
d Cade, advancing with his followers
London, encamped on Blackheath.
elated by his victory, he still maintained
arance of moderation; and transmitting
ourt a plausible list of grievances, pro-
that when these should be redressed,
d Say the treasurer, and Cromer sheriff
t, should be punished for their malver-
, he would immediately lay down his
The council, perceiving the public re-
nce to fight against men so reasonable in
pretensions, carried the king, for present
y, to Kenilworth; and the city immediately
ed its gates to Cade, who maintained, dur-
some time, great order and discipline
ng his followers. But being obliged, in
r to gratify their malevolence against Say
Cromer, to put these men to death without
gal trial, he found that, after the commission
his crime, he was no longer able to control
r riotous disposition, and that his authority
despised. Proceeding to acts of plunder
violence, the citizens, who had hitherto
passive, now took the alarm; and, being
nded by a detachment of soldiers, sent them
lord Scales, governor of the tower, they re-
ed the rebels with great slaughter. The
[illegible] were so discouraged by the blow,
that

condign punishment.

A strong suspicion existed among the
that the duke of York had secretly i
Cade to this attempt, to sound the dispo
the people towards his title and family;
ing he meant to return from Ireland
armed force, they issued orders debar
entrance into England. The duke re
enemies, by landing with only his ord
tinue; but their precautions convince
his own danger, from their jealousy.
saw the impossibility of remaining a
ject, and the necessity of proceeding fo
support of his claim. His partisans
were instructed to maintain his right b
sion, and by the established constitutic
kingdom; and the arguments adduce
adherents and those of the reigning fan
divided and distracted the people. T
Courtney and the duke of Norfolk esp

to present a petition against the duke
et, lord Dudley, and several others
rank, praying the king to remove
ever from his person and councils.
a violent attack, and supported but
ecedents; yet the king durst not openly
and satisfied himself with a temporiz-
, which only the more exposed his

ke of York, trusting to these symp-
saffection, raised an army of ten thou-
with which he marched towards Lon-
anding a reformation of the govern-
l the removal of the duke of Somerset
ower and authority. He unexpectedly
gates of the city shut against him;
is retreating into Kent, he was follow-
king, at the head of a superior army.
ensued: the removal of Somerset, and
mitting to a trial in parliament, were
d on; and the court pretending to
ith the demand, that nobleman was
st. The duke of York was then per-
pay his respects to the king in his tent;
epeating his charge against the duke
et, he was surprised to see that mi-
from behind the curtain, and offer to
his innocence. Richard now found
d been betrayed; and that it was be-
ssary, for his own safety, to lower his
s. No violence, however, was attempt-
him: the nation was not in a disposi-
bear the destruction of so popular a
d his son, who was not in the power
rt, might still be able to revenge his
ll his enemies. He was therefore dis-
missed:

several Gascon lords, attached to the
government, and disgusted at the new
of the French, came to London, and
return to their allegiance under Hen
earl of Shrewsbury, with a body of eig
sand men, was sent over to support the
deaux opened its gates to him: he mad
master of Fronsac, Castillon, and so
places; but, as Charles hastened to
dangerous invasion, the fortunes of the
were soon reversed. Shrewsbury, a
warrior, above fourscore years of ag
battle: his conquests were lost; and
of recovering the province of Gascony
ever extinguished.

Though it has ever been the curse of
to be encumbered with continental po
the people expressed great discontent o
casion, and threw all the blame on the
While they were in this disposition, th
delivery of a son, who received the

ting even the appearance of royalty.
and the council, destitute of this
l finding themselves unable to resist
rty, were obliged to yield to the
ney sent Somerset to the tower; and
Richard lieutenant of the kingdom,
to open and hold a session of parli-
at assembly also, taking into consi-
state of the kingdom, created him
uring pleasure. Yet the duke, in-
hing them to make farther conces-
red somewhat timid and irresolute,
ving the power which was tendered
e desired that it might be recorded
it, that this authority was conferred
their own free motion, without any
on his own part; and expressed his
hey would assist him in the exercise
noderation of Richard was certainly
l though very amiable; yet was it
h bad consequences in the present
d, by giving time to the animosities
o rise and ferment, it proved the
those furious wars and commotions
d.

ies of the duke of York soon found
ower to make advantage of his ex-
ion. Henry being so far recovered
temper as to be able in appearance to
royal power, was moved to resume
y, to annul the protectorship of the
lease Somerset from the tower, and

mit the administration into the l
nobleman. Richard, sensible of
to which he was exposed, levied a
but still without advancing any prete
the crown. He complained only of th
ministers, and demanded a reformatio
government. A battle, however, was f
St. Alban's, in which the Yorkists, witl
fering any material loss, slew about fi
sand of their enemies; among whom
duke of Somerset, the earl of Northum
the earl of Stafford, eldest son of the
Buckingham, lord Clifford, and mar
persons of distinction. The king hin
into the hands of the duke of York, whc
him with great respect and tenderness
was only obliged, which he regarded i
no hardship, to commit the whole aut
the crown into the hands of his rival.
the first blood spilt in that fatal quarrel
the houses of York and Lancaster, whi
during thirty years, and which is com
have cost the lives of eighty princes of t
and almost entirely annihilated the an
bility of England.

After all, it was not difficult to wre
from hands so little tenacious as thos
duke of York: Margaret availing herse
prince's absence, and of rather a bette
health in Henry, produced the latter b
house of lords, where he declared his i
of resuming the government. To this
the house of lords assented, though t
recently acknowledged Richard as pr
and the king was reinstated in his a
without any open opposition.

n outward reconciliation was procured by means of the archbishop of Canterbury, be- en the rival factions; but it was impossible restore trust and confidence. One of the 's retinue, having insulted a retainer of the of Warwick's, their companions on both s took part in the quarrel: a fierce combat ed; and the earl, apprehending his life to be ed at, fled to Calais; the government of h gave him the command of the only regular tary force maintained by England; and both ies, in every county, made preparations for ding the contest by force of arms.

he earl of Salisbury, marching to join the e of York, was overtaken at Blore-heath, on borders of Staffordshire, by lord Audley, commanded much superior forces. A small let with steep banks ran between the armies. sbury here supplied his defect in numbers by tagem. He feigned a retreat, and allured lley to follow him with precipitation: but n the van of the royal army had passed the k, Salisbury suddenly turned upon them; partly by the surprise, partly by the divi- of the enemies' forces, put them to the e; and reached the general rendezvous of Yorkists at Ludlow.

o the same place, the earl of Warwick ught over a choice body of veterans from is, on whom it was thought the fortune of war would much depend; but this reinforce- t occasioned, in the issue, the immediate of the duke of York's party. When the l army approached, and a general action every hour expected, sir Andrew Trollop, commanded the veterans, deserted to the

leaders, escaped to Calais, where
pularity among all orders of men
him partisans; while the friends
York, in England, kept themselv
in readiness, to rise on the first s

Warwick having met with som
cesses at sea, landed in Kent, w
Salisbury, and the earl of March
the duke of York; and being met
and other persons of distinction
amidst the acclamations of the p
don. The city immediately open
him; and his troops increasing
march, he soon found himself in
face the royal army, which hast
ventry to attack him. A battle
Northampton; and was soon d
the royalists by the infidelity o
Ruthin, who, commanding He
serted to the enemy during the

arliament being summoned in the king'
it Westminster, the duke soon after ap
there from Ireland; and stating to th
of peers his own claim, exhorted them t
ice to the lineal succession. The lord
ed for some time in suspense; but a
declared in favour of the claim of th
f York.

as decreed, however, that Henry should
ie to possess the dignity during the re
er of his life; that the administration o
untry should in the mean while remain
lichard; and that he should be acknow
the true and lawful heir of the monarchy
decision the duke acquiesced; and Hen
d he even been at liberty, would not pro
have objected to it.

high spirited Margaret, however, spurne
compact, and resolved to assert in arm
ghts of her family. After the battle o
impton, she had fled to the north, where
fability, insinuation, and address, among
thern barons, raised her an army twenty
nd strong, with a celerity which was nei
pected by her friends, nor apprehended
enemies.

duke of York, informed of her appear
the north, hastened thither with a body

who possessed personal bravery in a degree, thought that he should be fo graced, if by taking shelter behind should for a moment resign the vi woman. He therefore descended into and offered battle to the enemy, whi stantly accepted. The great inequali bers was sufficient alone to decide th but the queen, by sending a detachr fell on the rear of the duke's army, re advantage still more certain and u The duke himself was killed in the ac his head was, by Margaret's orders the gates of York, with a paper crow sion of his pretended title. His son, Rutland, a very promising youth of was murdered in cool blood, by lord in revenge for the loss of his father, a tle of St. Albans. The earl of Sali wounded and taken prisoner, and im beheaded, with several other perso tinction, by martial law, at Pomfre fell near three thousand Yorkists in t the duke himself was greatly and justly by his own party. He perished in th year of his age, and left three sons, George, and Richard, with three d Anne, Elizabeth, and Margaret.

The queen, after this important vi vided her army. She sent the smalle under Jasper Tudor, earl of Pemb brother to the king, against Edward, duke of York; and herself marched larger towards London, where the ear wick had been left with the comma Yorkists. Pembroke was defeated b

timer's cross in Herefordshire, with the near four thousand men. He himself l by flight; but his father, sir Owen Tu- as taken prisoner, and immediately be- by Edward's orders. Margaret, how- oon compensated this defeat by a victory she obtained over the earl of Warwick, Albans, which had already been dyed ivil gore. About two thousand three d of the vanquished, perished in the bat- pursuit; and the person of the king fell nto the hands of his own party.

queen reaped no great advantage from tory. Edward duke of York advanced er from the other side; and collecting the s of Warwick's army was soon in a con- o give her battle with superior forces. e of her danger, she found it necessary to towards the north; and Edward entered ital amidst the acclamations of the citi- Instead of evincing the timid caution of er, he determined to avail himself of his ity, and to assume at once the name and of king. His army was ordered to as- in St. John's Fields; great numbers of urrounded them; a suitable harangue was nced to this mixed multitude; and when lemanded, whether they would accept of l, eldest son of the late duke of York, for ng? they expressed their assent by loud ful acclamations. A great number of , lords, magistrates, and other persons of ion, were next assembled at Baynard's who ratified the popular election; A. D. new king was proclaimed in Lon- 1461. the title of Edward IV.

In

In this manner ended the reign of E a monarch who, while in his cradle, proclaimed king both of France and and who began his life with the most prospects that any prince in Europe enjoyed. His weakness and his disp were the chief causes of the public c but whether his queen, and his minis not also guilty of some great abuses is not easy for us at this distance of ti termine.

The most remarkable law which this reign, was for the election of cou bers. After the fall of the feudal sy distinction of tenures was in some mea and every freeholder was, by degrees, to give his vote. This innovation wa casion of great disorder; and in the ei tenth of Henry the sixth, laws were which limited the electors to such as forty shillings a year in land, free fro dens; a sum equivalent to near twent of our present money. It should als served, that the first instance of debt b tracted on parliamentary security this reign.

Whatever might be the imputatio last reign, the new one commenced n more happy auspices. The peaceful Edward the fourth concealed an heart against the emotions of compassion. dett, a tradesman of London, who ke at the sign of the Crown, having jocul that he would make his son heir to t this pleasantry was interpreted into a of Edward's title; and he was conden

ed for the offence. Similar acts of ty-
were proper preludes to the events which
; and the scaffold, as well as the field,
ntly streamed with the noblest blood of
nd. From long animosity, the contend-
nilies were become implacable; the par-
of the house of Lancaster chose the red
their mark of distinction; those of York
enominated from the white; and these in-
wars which harassed England, were thus
over Europe by the name of the quarrel
n the two roses.

spirit of Margaret was not yet broken:
d collected in Yorkshire an army of sixty
nd strong; and the king and the earl of
ick hastened with forty thousand men
ck her progress. In a skirmish for the
e of the river Ayre, the Yorkists were
back with great slaughter. The earl of
ick dreading the consequence of this dis-
at a time when a decisive action was
hour expected, immediately ordered his
to be brought him, which he stabbed
the whole army; and, kissing the hilt of
ord, swore that he was determined to
he fate of the meanest soldier. And, to
he greater security, a proclamation was
time issued, giving to every one full li-
to retire; but menacing the severest pu-
ent to those who should discover any symp-
of cowardice in the ensuing battle.

last, the hostile armies met at Touton;
fierce and bloody battle ensued, which
in a total victory on the side of the
its. Edward issued orders to give no
r. The routed army was pursued to

Tadcaster

who was now engaged in Henry's
brou,ht a prisoner to Edward; and
after, beheaded by martial law at Yor

Henry and Margaret had remaine
during the action; but learning th
their army. and being sensible that
was irrecoverably lost, they fled with
cipitation into Scotland, accompani
duke of Exeter, who, though he ha
Edward's sister, had taken part witi
castrians, and by Henry duke of Son
principal commander in the unfortu
of Touton.

During these civil commotions in
the Scots had been in a manner pa
present king James III. was a mino
regency was disputed by the quee
and the family of Douglas. Marg
Scotland little less distracted than
but on her offering to the council to
them immediately the impregnable f

ling the government. That assembl
hesitated between the two families; th
ized the title of Edward, and passed an
attainder against Henry and Margaret,
t their infant son Edward, and several of
rincipal adherents.

nestic peace, however, was not yet re-
, nor was there wanting danger from the
of foreign powers. Lewis the eleventh,
ance, was of an intriguing and politic
; and to keep alive the flames of civil
l in England, he sent a body of two
nd men at arms to the assistance of
. These enabled Margaret again to
e field; but, though reinforced by a nu-
s train of adventurers from Scotland,
many partisans of the family of Lan-
she received a check at Hedgley-more
ord Montagu, brother to the earl of War-
who was so encouraged with this suc-
aat while a numerous reinforcement was
ir march to join him by orders from Ed-
he ventured with his own troops alone
ck the Lancastrians at Hexham, and ob-
a complete victory over them. The duke
nerset, the lords Roos and Hungerford
aken in the pursuit, and immediately be-
l by martial law. Summary justice was
manner executed on several persons of
All those who were spared in the field
d on the scaffold; and the utter extermi-
of their adversaries was now become the
t object of the York party.

fate of the ex-royal family deserves to
orded. Margaret, flying with her son
forest, was beset, during the darkness of

the night, by robbers, who despo
rings and jewels, and treated her
indignity. The partition of t
raised a quarrel among them;
attention was thus engaged, she
tunity of plunging with her son
of the forest, where she wanderec
spent with hunger and fatigue,
ed with terror and affliction.
wretched condition, she saw a r
with his naked sword; and findi
no means of escape, with sing
mind, she advanced towards hir
ing to him the young prince, cal
"Here, my friend, I commit tc
safety of your king's son." T
humanity and generous spirit hac
not entirely lost, by his vicious
was charmed with the confide
him; and vowed, not only to a
injury against the princess, but
self entirely to her service. By
dwelt some time concealed in
was at last conducted to the se
she made her escape into Flande
thence to her father's court, v
several years in privacy and re
husband was neither so fortunat
rous in finding the means of esc
his friends took him under their

A. D. 1465. conveyed him into Lan
he remained concealed
but he was at last detecte

to Edward, and thrown into th
preservation of his life was ov
generosity of his enemies, tha

hich they had entertained of his abili-

mprisonment of Henry, the expulsion
aret, and the execution and confiscation
e most eminent Lancastrians, seemed
ull security to Edward's government.
prince had no sooner vanquished his
than he delivered himself to the im-
his amorous passions. Elizabeth Grey
hter of the dutchess of Bedford, by her
arriage with sir Richard Woodville,
vidow of sir John Grey of Groby, who
n slain in the second battle of St.
fighting on the side of Lancaster, find-
usband's estate confiscated, seized the
ity, when the king was on a visit to the
of Bedford, to entreat his pity for her
shed and distressed children. The
so much beauty in affliction, strongly
Edward; and he was reduced in his
he posture of a supplicant at the feet
eth. But the lady was either averse
nourable love, or inflamed with am-
nd the caresses and importunities of
g and amiable Edward proved fruit-
ist her rigid and inflexible virtue. His
stimulated by opposition, carried him
ll bounds; and he offered to share with
eart as well as his throne. The mar-
; privately celebrated at Grafton; and
t was carefully kept for a time, from
ma to which the king was reduced.

his first interview with Elizabeth
ward had cast his eye on Bona of Sa-
r of the queen of France, who, he
ould, by her marriage, ensure him the

marriage for the king; his pro
accepted; and nothing remai
fication of the terms agreed on,
over the princess to England
in this state, when the secret o
riage broke out, and the haugh
himself affronted, immediately
land, inflamed with rage and in
Edward was little careful to
nation or apology.

Every incident now tende
breach between the king and t
ject. All preferments and hon
ed on the queen's friends and
wick bore with impatience tl
his influence; and the nobility
vying the sudden growth of
partook in his discontent; bu
siderable associate that he gai
duke of Clarence, the king's

per person to oppose the dark a
ambition of Lewis the eleventh
lso formed a league with the duke of
but from these foreign negotiations
on was withdrawn by domestic insur-
The improper application of some
ie revenue of St. Leonard's hospital,
, which had been destined for the re-
poor, provoked the common people
arms. These being headed by sir
vil and sir John Coniers, defeated and
th the earl of Pembroke; and seizing
Rivers, the father of the queen, with
hm, immediately executed them.
shade rests on this part of the English
nd the real views and objects of the
actors cannot now be developed with
e of certainty. At the commencement
ebellion, Warwick resided, together
on-in-law the duke of Clarence, in his
nt of Calais; and it appears, that his
Iontagu acted with vigour against the
rebels. We may thence presume, that
rection had not proceeded from the
unsels and instigation of Warwick.
Clarence indeed came over to England,
eir service to Edward, were received
my apparent suspicion, and were en-
by him in the highest commands.
r, we find the rebels quieted and dis-
a general pardon granted by Edward,
ggestion of the earl of Warwick; but
ourageous a prince, if secure of War-
elity, should have granted a general
o men who had been guilty of such

violent and personal outrages, is
nor why that nobleman, if un
have endeavoured to appease a
which he was able to reap su
To solve this difficulty we may
after this insurrection, there wa
peace, during which the king lo
of Nevil with honours and favc
est nature; yet it was not long
ward, being invited to a feast b
of York, a younger brother of
tained a sudden suspicion that
seize his person or to murder hi
sequence abruptly left the enter

Another rebellion, which is as
for as the preceding events,
this; but it does not appear tha
Nevil had any particular interes
where it broke out, or were at
fomenting it. It arose in Linco
headed by sir Robert Welles, so
that name. The army of the r
to thirty thousand men; but t
defeated them, took their comm
and ordered him immediately t

Edward, during these transa
tertained so little jealousy of th
wick or duke of Clarence, that h
commissioners of array to levy
the rebels; but these maleconte
they left the court, raised troo
name, issued declarations again
ment, and complained of grie
sions, and bad ministers. The
feat of Welles disconcerted all t

re obliged to disband their army,
nto Devonshire, whence they em-
made sail towards Calais.
y-governor, whom Warwick had
, was one Vaucler, a Gascon, who
return in this miserable condition,
admittance; nor would he permit
chess of Clarence to land, though a
before she had been delivered on
f a son, and was at that time much
A little wine for the use of the
l that he would suffer to be carried
out he secretly palliated his conduct
, by alleging that the fortress was
with provisions, and that he could
the obedience of the garrison. The
affected to be convinced; and hav-
me Flemish vessels, he immediately
wards France.

of France received him with the monstrations of regard, and jealous ice between Edward and the duke of he hoped to make him his instru- establishing the house of Lancaster. uld exceed the animosity which had etween that house and the earl of But his present distresses, and the f Lewis, made him hearken to terms odation; and Margaret being sent for rs, where she then resided, an agree- ed by mutual interest, was soon con- veen them. It was stipulated that hould espouse the cause of Henry, our to restore him to liberty, and to him on the throne; that the admi- the government, during the minority

of young Edward, Henry's son, trusted conjointly to the earl of the duke of Clarence; that prince E marry the lady Anne, second dau nobleman; and that the crown, i failure of male issue in that prin scend to the duke of Clarence, exclusion of the reigning king and

A. D. 1470. Edward, apprised of wl place, foresaw that it wo dissolve an alliance comp discordant materials. He emplo the train of the dutchess of Clare sent to the duke the imprudenc nection he had formed with the his father, and the implacable ene mily; and Clarence, struck with his situation, on a promise of fo cretly engaged to abandon the Lanc During this negotiation, Warwic cretly carrying on a correspondenc nature with his brother, the mar tague, who was entirely trusted by like motives produced a like resol nobleman, Confiding in this pro port, Warwick availed himself o cross the channel with a body of F and landed at Dartmouth, accom duke of Clarence.

Edward, though brave and acti foresight. He had made no prepar event; and when warned by the gundy of his danger, he had answer for nothing more than to see War lish ground. The prodigious popu ever, of that nobleman, the zeal of

ty, and the spirit of discontent with
ny were infected, drew such multitudes
idard, that in a very few days his army
l to sixty thousand men, and was con-
ncreasing. Edward, who had been en-
suppressing a rebellion in the north,
ened southwards to encounter him;
wo armies approached each other near
am. The rapidity of Warwick's pro-
d incapacitated the duke of Clarence
ecuting *his* plan of treachery; but the
of Montague, having concerted measures
adherents, took to arms in the night-
d hastened with loud acclamations to
s quarters. The king was alarmed at
, and starting from bed, heard the cry
isually employed by the Lancastrian
ord Hastings, his chamberlain, inform-
of the danger, urged him to make his
speedy flight, from an army where he
any concealed enemies, and where few
zealously attached to his service. He
time to get on horseback, and to hurry
nall retinue to Lynne in Norfolk, where
me ships ready, he instantly embarked.
e earl of Warwick, in no longer space
en days from his first landing, was left
ister of the kingdom.

dward's danger did not end with his
tion. The Easterlings or Hans-Towns
n at war, both with France and Eng-
d some ships of these people hovering
nglish coast, espied the king's vessels,
chase to them; nor was it without ex-
ficulty that he made his escape into the

port

port of Alemaer in Holland, where he l
almost destitute of every thing.

The duke of Burgundy was embarrass
to receive the abdicated monarch; and
already to hold out, that his connection
with the kingdom of England, not wi
king. Vaucler, the deputy-governor of
declared with great demonstrations of j
his old party; and every thing promise
settlement of the English crown in the fa

A. D. 1471. Lancaster. Henry had been de
from the Tower, and proclaime
with great solemnity; every
made during the reign of Edward was re
and that prince was declared to be an us

Edward, however, being assisted by tl
of Burgundy, his brother-in-law, thoug
covert way, hastened to return: and in
to take revenge on his enemies, made an
to land with his forces, which exceeded
thousand men, on the coast of Norfolk.
there repulsed, he sailed northwards, a
embarked at Ravenspur in Yorkshire.
that the new magistrates, who had be
pointed by the earl of Warwick, kept t
ple every where from joining him, he pre
and even made oath, that he came not
lenge the crown, but only the inheritanc
house of York, which of right belonged
and that he did not intend to disturb th
of the kingdom.

This affected moderation, every day l
new partisans to his standard: he was a
into the city of York; and was soon in
situation as gave him hopes of succeedin

ier claims and pretensions. Warwick
d an army at Leicester, with an in-
f meeting, and of giving battle to the
but Edward, by taking another road,
im unmolested, and presented himself
ie gates of London. He was readily
l into a capital, the inhabitants of which
lt with pleasure on his former courteous
iiliar demeanor; and Henry, destined
e perpetual sport of fortune, again fell
hands of his enemies.

vick, without waiting the arrival of
argaret, who was hastening to England,
nforced by his son-in-law Clarence, and
er, the marquis of Montague, took post
t, in the vicinity of London. His bro-
ntague seems to have remained sin-
ttached to the interests of his family:
on-in-law, though bound to him by every
nour and gratitude, though he shared
r of the regency, though he had been
by Warwick in all the honours and pa-
of the house of York, resolved to fulfil
t engagements which he had formerly
th his brother, and to support the inte-
his own family. Accordingly, he de-
Edward in the night-time, and carried
ody of twelve thousand men along with
Warwick was now too far advanced to
and as he rejected with disdain the
accommodation offered by Edward and
, he was obliged to hazard a general
ient. The battle was fought with ob-
n both sides; and the victory remained
lecided between them. But an accident
ie balance to the side of the Yorkists.

Edward's

Warwick, contrary to his usual
gaged that day on foot, resolvin
army that he meant to share every
them, and was slain in the thick
gagement. His brother underw
fate; and as Edward had issued
give any quarter, a great and u
slaughter was made in the pursuit.

The very day on which this d
was fought, queen Margaret and
about eighteen years of age, and a
of great hopes, landed at Weymou
by a small body of French forces
princess received intelligence of
captivity, and of the defeat and de
of Warwick, her courage, which
her under so many disastrous ever
deserted her; and she immediate
the dismal consequences of this c
first she took sanctuary in the ab
lieu; but being encouraged by th

us Edward at Teukes-
he Severn. The Lan-
y defeated: the earl of
nloc were killed in the
rset, and about twenty
on, having taken shelter
gged out, and immedi-
army was entirely dis-

her unhappy son being
ought to the king, he
insulting manner, how
ominions? The young
his high birth than of
d, that he came thither
nce. The ungenerous
answer, and insensible
face with his gauntlet;
e and Gloucester, lord
Gray, taking the blow
violence, hurried the
rtment, and there dis-
aggers. Margaret was
where her husband ex-
battle of Teukesbury:
ural or violent death is
d, and was generally
Gloucester killed him
the universal odium
urred, inclined perhaps
his crimes, by adding

ward, who was A. D.
on the throne, 1472.
:—he was ac-
ble to resist the allure-
ments

ments of prosperity. He now devote
to pleasure and amusement; but was so
from his lethargy by the prospect o
conquests. He formed a league with
of Burgundy to invade France; for th
he obtained from parliament a tenth
or two shillings in the pound; which
only 31,460l. and they added to thi
whole fifteenth, and three quarters of
but as the king deemed these sums sti
to the undertaking, he attempted to le
by way of *benevolence*; a kind of exact
except during the reigns of Henry the
Richard the second, had not been n
tised in former times, and which, t
consent of the parties was pretended to
could not be deemed entirely voluntar

A. D. 1475. Due preparations being
king passed over to Calais
army of fifteen hundred me
and fifteen thousand archers; but all
of conquest were damped, by fin
the constable, St. Pol, on whose re
pended, neither received him into th
which he was master, nor did the du
gundy bring him the smallest assista
circumstance gave him great disgu
clined him to listen to the pacific pr
Lewis, who consented to pay Edwar
five thousand crowns, on condition
should immediately withdraw his a
France; and promised to pay him fifty
crowns a year during their joint live
farther stipulated, that the dauphin
age, should marry Edward's eldest
and these articles were ratified in a p

which the two monarchs had near

ere the principal articles of this treaty, is little honourable to either. Lewis, did himself some credit by stipulating erty of queen Margaret, who, though, eath of her husband and son, she could be formidable to government, was ned in custody by Edward. Lewis thousand crowns for her ransom; and ess, who had been so active on the the world, and who had experienced iety of fortune, passed the remainder ys in tranquillity and privacy, till the , when she died.

Edward had so little reason to be sa- the conduct of the duke of Burgundy, d to that prince a power of acceding treaty; but Charles, when the offer him, haughtily replied, that he was pport himself without the assistance d, and that he would make no peace is till three months after Edward's re- is own country. This prince possessed bition and courage of a conqueror; defective in policy and prudence, pe- ast in battle against the Swiss; a peo- he despised, and who, though brave had hitherto been in a manner over- the general system of Europe.

ne time, Edward had relapsed into his onal indolence and love of pleasure, h he seemed only to awake to exercise tyranny on his own family. The duke ce, after all his services in deserting had never been able to regain the

1483. forty-second year of hi
twenty-third of his reign
daughters, Edward left two
prince of Wales, his successor, t
teenth year, and Richard duke
years younger. From his event
character of this sovereign ma
duced. It is not one on which th
can dwell with satisfaction.

Edward, on his death bed, ha
regency to his brother the duke
then absent in the north, and he
though ineffectually exhorted the
live in peace and unanimity, du
years of his son. No sooner, ho
eyes closed, than their jealousies
all were anxious to conciliate th
duke of Gloucester.

That prince, whose ambition w
as his conscience was *seared*, alre
the throne: but he proceeded

rk, attended by a numerous train of the
gentry. When he reached Northamp-
vas joined by the duke of Buckingham,
s also attended by a splendid retinue;
ie heard that the king was hourly ex-
on that road, he resolved to wait his
under colour of conducting him thence
to London. The earl of Rivers, ap-
ve that the place would be too narrow
n so many attendants, sent his pupil for-
another road to Stony Stratford; and
mself to Northampton, in order to pay
ts to the duke of Gloucester. He was
with the greatest appearance of cor-
passed the evening in an amicable man-
Gloucester and Buckingham; and pro-
n the road with them next day to join
But on entering Stony Stratford, he
ted by orders from the duke of Glouces-
ther with sir Richard Gray, one of the
ons, and instantly conducted to Pom-
loucester approached the young prince
greatest demonstrations of respect; and
ired to satisfy him with regard to the
committed on his uncle and brother;
vard was too much attached to these
itions, to dissemble his displeasure at
ment they had experienced.

e intelligence of this revolution, the
d to the sanctuary of Westminster, at-
y the marquis of Dorset; and carried
he five princesses, together with the
York. But Gloucester, anxious to have
of York also in his power, made use of
bishops of Canterbury and York, who,
the villain's artifice, prevailed on the

with her tears, bade him an eternal

The council, without waiting for
of parliament, had invested the du
cester with the high dignity of pr
having so far succeeded in his v
longer hesitated in removing all the
which lay between him and the thro
he resolved to wade through blood.
of the earl of Rivers, and of the ol
detained in Pomfret, was first deter
he easily obtained the consent of
Buckingham, as well as of lord H
this violent and sanguinary measure
promptly executed.

The protector then assailed the du
ingham, and by specious argument
of great private advantage, obtaine
a promise of supporting him in all his
but on sounding lord Hastings, he
nobleman impregnable in his allegia
lity to the children of Edward. F

before they should enter on business; ving paid some compliments to Morton of Ely, on the excellent strawberries ıe raised in his garden at Holborn, he the favour of having a dish of them, of course was readily accorded. The ɔr then left the council, as if called away e other business; but soon after return- h an angry and inflamed countenance, d them, what punishment those deserved d plotted against *his* life, who was so elated to the king, and was entrusted e administration of government? Has- plied, that they merited the punishment ɔrs. "These traitors," cried the protector, ıe sorceress, my brother's wife, and Jane is mistress, with others their associates: hat a condition they have reduced me by cantations and witchcraft;" upon which bare his arm, all shrivelled and decayed. ɔunsellors, who knew that this infirmity ended him from his birth, looked on each with amazement; and particularly lord gs, who, as he had since Edward's death d in an intrigue with Jane Shore, was ly anxious concerning the issue of these dinary proceedings. "Certainly, my said he, "if they be guilty of these they deserve the severest punishment." do you reply to me," exclaimed the pro- "with your ifs and your ands? You are ef abettor of that witch Shore: you are f a traitor: and I swear by St. Paul, that not dine before your head be brought Instantly, he struck the table with his hand;

quality." The recorder, Fitz
then commanded to repeat the
duke's speech; but the man, w
the office, took care to have it
he only conveyed to them the se
of Buckingham. Still the audi
profound silence: "this is wond
cried the duke: "express you
friends, one way or other: wh
you on this occasion, it is mere
gard which we bear to you. Th
mons have sufficient authority, w
sent, to appoint a king: but I
to declare in plain terms, whe
will have the duke of Glouceste
reign?" On this, some of the mea
incited by the protector's and Bu
vants, raised a feeble cry of "
Richard!" This was judged suffi
ingham, with the mayor, haster

ctor declared his purpose of maintain-
yalty to the present sovereign, and ex-
iem to adhere to the same resolution.
joined, that the people were determined
nother prince; and if he rejected their
as voice, they must look out for one
ld be more compliant. This argument
powerful to be resisted; he consented
t of the crown: and thenceforth be-
legitimate and rightful sovereign.
idiculous farce was soon after followed
ep a tragedy as any the English history

Not satisfied with taking possession
rone, Richard gave orders to sir Ro-
kenbury, constable of the Tower, to
iephews to death; but this gentleman,
sentiments of honour, refused to stain
s in the infamous deed. The tyrant
for sir James Tyrrel, who promised
e; and he ordered Brakenbury to re-
this gentleman the keys and govern-
the Tower for one night. Tyrrel
three associates, Slater, Dighton, and
ame in the night-time to the door of
nber where the princes were lodged;
ing in the assassins, he bade them exe-
ir commission while he himself staid

They found the young princes in
fallen into a profound sleep. After
ng them with the bolster and pillows,
wed their naked bodies to Tyrrel, who
them to be buried at the foot of the
leep in the ground, under a heap of
These circumstances were all confessed
bloody actors in the following reign:
they were never punished for the crime;

probably.

CHAP. IX.

The Reigns of Richard III. *a*

THE first acts of Richard
gratitude to those who ha
usurping the crown. Thoma
was created duke of Norfolk;
his son, earl of Surry; and th
ingham was invested with the
and received a grant of the
Bohun earl of Hereford.

But it was impossible that a
ship could subsist between me
minds as Richard and Buckin
Richard, dreading his powe
ruin of this formidable subject
of Buckingham increased v
certain it is the latter early h

rd the young earl of Richmond, as the only rson capable of opposing an usurper, whose rder of the young princes had rendered him object of general detestation. Henry earl Richmond was at this time detained in a rd of honourable custody by the duke of ittany; and his descent, which seemed to give n some pretensions to the crown, had for ne time been a great object of jealousy. derived his lineage from John of Gaunt, and s nearly allied to Henry VI. His mother coming a widow, had espoused, in second rriage, sir Henry Stafford, uncle to Buck-ham, and after the death of that gentleman d married lord Stanley, but had no children either of these husbands; and her son Henry s thus, in the event of her death, the sole ir of all her fortunes; and at a period when reditary descent was but laxly regarded, had ny plausible and even fair pretensions to the own.

As all the descendants of the house of York re now either women or minors, Morton con-ved the idea of uniting the opposite factions, contracting a marriage between the earl of chmond and the princess Elizabeth, the eldest ughter of Edward IV.; and the queen dow-er, finding in this prospect the probable eans of revenge for the murder of her bro-er and her sons, readily embraced the project. It the conspiracy had not escaped the vigi-nt eye of Richard; he rapidly levied troops, d summoning Buckingham to appear at urt, that nobleman replied by taking arms in ales. At that very time, however, there ppened to fall such heavy rains, so incessant

and continued, as exceeded an
memory of man; and the Se
other rivers in that neighbourh
a height which rendered th
and prevented Buckingham fro
the heart of England to join
The Welshmen, partly moved
at this extraordinary event, and
by famine in their camp, fell off
Buckingham, finding himself
a disguise, and took shelter in th
nister, an old servant of his fam
detected in his retreat, he was
king at Salisbury, and instantl
The other conspirators hearing
tune, dispersed; and the marqui
the bishop of Ely made their esc
Some who fell into Richard's h
cuted; yet he seems not to hav
discriminate severity; though
one gentleman who suffered
this rebellion, but in reality,
quibbling verses, which he
against Richard and his ministe

"The rat, the cat, and Lov

"Rule all England under th

alluding to the names of Ratcli

r sanctuary, and put herself and her
i his power. This induced the tyrant
rther his views for the establishment
ne. He had married Anne, the se-
ister of the earl of Warwick, and
Edward prince of Wales, whom Ri-
elf had murdered; but this princess
n him but one son, who died about
he considered her as an invincible
the settlement of his fortune, and
lieved to have carried her off by
crime by no means too black for
ster to perpetrate. He now thought
wer to remove the chief perils which
his government. The earl of
he knew, could never be formida-
m his projected marriage with the
izabeth, the true heir of the crown;
e intended, by means of a papal
, to espouse, himself, this princess,
unite in his own family their contend-

The queen-dowager, eager to re-
ost authority, neither scrupled this
lliance, nor felt any horror at mar-
aughter to the murderer of her sons
other. She even joined so far her
th those of the usurper, that she
her partisans, and, among the rest,
he marquis of Dorset, desiring them
from the earl of Richmond; an in-
the earl could never afterwards for-
court of Rome, at the same time,
to for a dispensation; and Richard
at he could easily defend himself
interval, till it arrived, when he
full and secure settlement.

and assistance from the ministers
VIIIth; and with a small army of
men he sailed from Harfleur, and
out opposition at Milford-haven i

Richard, who knew not in wh
expect the invader, had taken pos
ham, in the centre of the kingdo
heard that his rival had been join
persons of consequence; but his
ceeded not so much from the ze
enemies, as from the infidelity of
friends. Except the duke of No
any nobleman was attached to h
the persons of whom he entertaine
suspicion, were lord Stanley and
William; whose connections wi
of Richmond, notwithstanding th
of attachment to his person, were
forgotten, or overlooked by him.
powered lord Stanley to levy forc

rivals at last approached each other at
orth, near Leicester; Henry of Richmond
e head of six thousand men, the usurper
ard, with an army of more than double
umber. Stanley, who commanded above
thousand men, took care to post himself
therstone, not far from the hostile camps,
e made such a disposition as enabled him,
casion might require, to join either party.
ard had too much sagacity not to discover
ntentions from those movements; but he
the secret from his own men for fear of dis-
ging them; nor did he take immediate re-
e on Stanley's son, as some of his courtiers
ed him; because he hoped that so valuable
dge would induce the father to prolong
farther his ambiguous conduct; certain
victory over the earl of Richmond would
le him to take ample revenge on all his
ies, open and concealed.

ie van of Richmond's army, consisting of
ers, was commanded by the earl of Oxford;
ilbert Talbot led the right wing; sir John
ge the left; the earl himself, accompanied
s uncle, the earl of Pembroke, posted him-
n the main body. Richard also took post
s main body, and entrusted the command
s van to the duke of Norfolk: as his wings
never engaged, we have not learned the
s of the several commanders. Soon after
battle began, lord Stanley, whose conduct
s whole affair discovers great precaution
ibilities, appeared in the field, and declared
e earl of Richmond. This measure, which
inexpected by the men, though not by their
rs, had a proportional effect on both armies;

it inspired unusual courage into Henry's
it threw Richard's into dismay and c
The intrepid tyrant, sensible of his
situation, cast his eye around the field,
crying his rival at no great distance, d
ously against him, in hopes that either
death or his own would decide the vi
tween them. He killed with his own
William Brandon, standard bearer to
he dismounted sir John Cheyney; and
within reach of Richmond himself, whc
not the combat; when sir
A. D. 1485. Stanley, breaking in with h
surrounded Richard, who v
whelmed by numbers, and perished l
too mild and honourable for his multi
detestable enormities. The usurp
killed, his men every where sought for
flight.

There fell in this battle about four
of the vanquished; and among these
of Norfolk, and several other persons
rank. The loss was inconsiderable o
of the victors. The body of Richard
in the field, covered with dead enemie
besmeared with blood: it was thrown
across a horse; carried to Leicester a
shouts of the insulting spectators; an
in the Gray-Friars church of that pl
veral of his adherents were soon after l

To be an apologist for Richard, is
favour to vice. All agree that he was
commit the most horrid crimes which
necessary for his purposes; and it is
that all his courage and capacity, qu
which he really seems not to have been

l never have made compensation to the
e for the danger of the precedent, and for
ontagious example of vice and murder,
d upon the throne. In regard to his per-
e was of small stature, hump-backed, and
harsh disagreeable countenance; so that
dy was in every particular no less deform-
n his mind.

victory at Bosworth was entirely decisive;
ie earl of Richmond was immediately sa-
with acclamations of "long live Henry the
" He accepted the title without hesi-
; and asserting his claim to the throne as
the house of Lancaster, was determined
to allow it to be discussed. He therefore
d all application to parliament for a set-
it of the crown; and his antipathy to the
of York permitted him not to ingraft his
sions with those of the princess Elizabeth,
:tled nuptials with whom he was deter-
to postpone till after the ceremony of his
ition.

s, however, was deferred on account of a
ul malady that raged in London, known
name of the *sweating sickness*,* which, fatal
was, seemed not to be propagated by any
ious infection, but arose from the general
ition of the air and of the human body.
than twenty-four hours the patient com-
died or recovered; but when the pesti-
ad exerted its fury for a few weeks, it was
ed to be considerably abated.

parations were then made for the cere-

* is said that this malady affected only the natives of
d, and that strangers were safe from its influence.

mony

it inspired unusual courage into Henry's soldiers; it threw Richard's into dismay and confusion. The intrepid tyrant, sensible of his desperate situation, cast his eye around the field, and descrying his rival at no great distance, drove furiously against him, in hopes that either Henry's death or his own would decide the victory between them. He killed with his own hands sir William Brandon, standard bearer to the earl; he dismounted sir John Cheyney; and was now within reach of Richmond himself, who declined not the combat; when sir William Stanley, breaking in with his troops, surrounded Richard, who was overwhelmed by numbers, and perished by a fate too mild and honourable for his multiplied and detestable enormities. The usurper being killed, his men every where sought for safety by flight.

A. D. 1485.

There fell in this battle about four thousand of the vanquished; and among these the duke of Norfolk, and several other persons of high rank. The loss was inconsiderable on the side of the victors. The body of Richard was found in the field, covered with dead enemies, and all besmeared with blood: it was thrown carelessly across a horse; carried to Leicester amidst the shouts of the insulting spectators; and interred in the Gray-Friars church of that place. Several of his adherents were soon after beheaded.

To be an apologist for Richard, is to shew favour to vice. All agree that he was ready to commit the most horrid crimes which appeared necessary for his purposes; and it is certain, that all his courage and capacity, qualities in which he really seems not to have been deficient, won

in act of gratitude, the king had restored
ward Strafford, eldest son of the duke of
gham, the honours and fortune of his
; but the ministers whom he trusted and
ed were chosen from the clergy; John
and Richard Fox, who were successively
o the sees of Canterbury and Winches-
re the persons in whom he chiefly con-
for Henry, as lord Bacon observes, loved
oy and advance prelates; because, having
shoprics to bestow, it was easy for him
rd their services.

g now firmly seated on the throne, in
o comply with the wishes of the people
parliament, rather than to gratify any
predilection, he resolved to espouse the
s Elizabeth. His marriage was cele-
at London, and that with greater appear-
universal joy than either his first entry
oronation. Henry remarked with much
sure this general favour borne to the
of York. The suspicions which arose
not only disturbed his tranquillity during
ole reign, but bred disgust towards his
herself, and poisoned all his domestic
ents. Though virtuous, amiable, and
ious to the last degree, she never met
proper return of affection, or even of
isance, from her husband; and the ma-
ideas of faction, in his sullen mind, pre-
over all the sentiments of conjugal en-
nt.

after his nuptials, Henry projected a
ss into the north, where the friends of
se of York, and even the partisans of
d, were numerous, in hopes of curing,

mony of Henry's coronation. In order to heighten the splendour of that spectacle, he bestowed the rank of knight banneret on twelve persons; and conferred peerages on three. Jasper earl of Pembroke, his uncle, was created duke of Bedford; Thomas lord Stanley, his father-in-law, earl of Derby; and Edward Courtnay, earl of Devonshire. At the coronation likewise there appeared a new institution, which the king had established for security as well as pomp, a band of fifty archers, who were termed yeomen of the guard. But, lest the people should take umbrage at this unusual symptom of jealousy in the prince, as if it implied a personal diffidence of his subjects, he declared the institution to be perpetual.

In the parliament that was soon after assembled at Westminster, a scruple was started, whether, as the king himself had been attainted, his right of succession might not thence be exposed to doubt. But the judges asserted, "That the crown takes away all defects and stops in blood; and that from the time the king assumed the royal authority the fountain was clear, and all attainders and corruptions of blood discharged." This maxim was readily received by the parliament, who proceeded to settle the entail of the crown according to the pleasure of the king. No mention was made of the princess Elizabeth: it was voted, "that the inheritance of the crown should rest, remain, and abide in the king;" and "that the succession should be secured to the heirs of his body;" but he pretended not in the case of their failure to give a preference to the house of Lancaster over that of York.

ed to the king's clemency; and the other ls hearing of this success, raised the siege Worcester, and dispersed themselves. The ffords took sanctuary in the church of Cul- n, a village near Abingdon; but they were en thence: the elder was executed at Tyburn; younger obtained a pardon.

Henry's joy for this success was followed, ne time after, by the birth of a prince, to om he gave the name of Arthur, in memory the famous British king of that name, from om it was pretended the family of Tudor ived its descent. But notwithstanding this domestic tie, the harshness with which he ated the queen created a disgust to his go- nment, which soon appeared by some extra- linary incidents.

There lived in Oxford one Richard A. D. 1480. on, a priest of a subtle and enterpris- genius. This man, for the purpose disturbing Henry, had cast his eyes on Lam- t Simnel, a youth of fifteen years of age, the of a baker, but endowed with understanding ove his years, and address above his condition. m he instructed to personate the unfortunate l of Warwick, son of the duke of Clarence, o had been committed to the tower at the nmencement of this reign; and the queen wager, irritated by the harsh treatment to ich her daughter was exposed, and the insig- icance into which she was fallen, was sus- cted of countenancing the imposture.

It was in Ireland the scene was first opened; t country had been governed by Clarence, d was still attached to his memory; and no ner did Simnel present himself to the earl of

Kildare

Kildare the deputy, and claim
the unfortunate Warwick, th
nobleman acknowledged him ;
Dublin followed the example o
tendered itsallegiance to Simne
tagenet.

Henry, perplexed at the ne
first seized the queen-dowage
fined in the nunnery of Berm
ended her life in poverty and s
exposed Warwick through the s
but though this had its effec
convinced not the people of
proached the king with havin
terfeit personage.

The conspiracy soon extendi
into by the earl of Lincoln, s
Suffolk, and of Elizabeth, elde
IV. a nobleman of courage an
ing established a corresponden
he had returned to Flanders,
arrived a little before him ; an
court of his aunt the dutchess

That princess, the widow of
had acquired great authority
ings, and hearing with indigna

sion of this military force, much raised
ge of the Irish, and made them enter-
esolution of invading England, as well
ake of plunder as of revenge for inju-
ved.

, apprized of the designs of his enemies,
himself for defence. He ordered
be levied in different parts of the king-
d put them under the command of the
Bedford and the earl of Oxford. And,
the people by an appearance of devo-
made a pilgrimage to our lady of Wal-
; and there offered up prayers for suc-
for deliverance from his enemies.

informed that Simnel was landed at
in Lancashire, he drew together his
nd advanced towards the enemy as far
try. The rebels had entertained hopes
disaffected countries in the north would
eir favour; but the people in general,
l of Lambert's imposture, and kept in
ne king's reputation for success and con-
ner remained in tranquillity, or gave
: to the royal army. The earl of Lin-
erefore, who commanded the rebels,
o hopes but in victory, was determined
the matter to a speedy decision; and
supported by the native courage of his
and emboldened by a great accession of
·s, declined not the conflict. The hos-
es met at Stoke, in the county of Not-
and a bloody and obstinate battle com-
The leaders of the rebels were resolved
er or to perish; and they inspired their
ith like resolution. The Germans also,
eran and experienced soldiers, kept the

king's victory was purchased w
entirely decisive. Lincoln,
Swart, perished in the field of
thousand of their followers, an
never more heard of, he was
A.D. undergone the same fat
1488. his tutor Simon, was
Simon, being a priest,
ted to close custody; and Sim
contemptible to be an object ei
sion or resentment, was parde
scullion in the king's kitchen
afterwards advanced to the r
The adherents of Simnel, ho
nished with great severity, a
progress through the kingdom,
his avarice and revenge, by le
on the delinquents.

---

* On the authority of the late M
a very few days before his lamented
his information, as well as can now
Dr. Dennison, a witness of what is
some light may perhaps be thrown on
tinguished nobleman. The walls of
seat at Minster Lovel, Oxfordshire,
ruins still remain, being pulled dow
materials, early in the last century,
discovered with a trap door, and in it
in complete armour was found. Fro
posed, and on probable grounds, that
Lord Lovel, who, after escaping from
took refuge in this place, and from
to be accounted for, was left to perish

ıe prosperous situation of Henry's domestic
s now afforded him leisure to observe the
tion of the neighbouring kingdoms. The
ıe of Scotland was filled by James the third,
ince of little industry and narrow genius.
ı, by the union of Castile and Arragon, in
ersons of Ferdinand and Isabella, and by
onquest of Granada from the Moors, began
ake a great figure in the transactions of
pe.

ance, during the two preceding reigns, had
ied a mighty increase of power and great-
most of the great fiefs, Normandy, Cham-
e, Anjou, Dauphiny, Guienne, Provence,
Burgundy, had been united to the crown;
during the minority of Charles the eighth,
, lady of Beaujeu, who, as his sister, had
ned the regency, formed the project of
ring Brittany, the last independent fief of
ıonarchy. The reigning duke was of slen-
apacity; and by abandoning himself to the
sels of Peter Landais, a man of mean birth,
disgusted his nobles. They had seized the
xious minister, and had put him to death;
heir apprehensions of the resentment of their
e induced them to invite the court of France
invasion of their country.

e French presently overrun Brittany; and
ake himself was obliged to seek shelter in
z. He in vain invoked the assistance of
and, and reminded Henry of the protection
d granted him in his distress. That mo-
ı was not ignorant what an important ac-
ion Brittany would be to France; but he
averse to the expence and hazard of war;
ıe flattered himself some unforeseen event

The death of the duke, which after, threw affairs into still gre and Henry now seemed determ vigour. An insurrection whic cited in the north on account of had been easily quelled by the whom the king had restored to taken into favour; and no lon domestic enemies, he dispatched six thousand men to the defen but though the English and th for some time masters of the fi in such confusion, that the gene his troops for England.

Meanwhile, Anne dutchess pressed on every side, had conse Maximilian king of the Roman mony was performed by proxy not prevent the lady of Beauj taining the prospect of obtainin Charles the eighth; and thoug

ed in the most indecent expressions; and
ry had never more reason to reproach him-
with misconduct. He immediately declared
esolution to invade France; and under that
nce he issued a commission for levying a
olence on his people; a species of taxation
h had been justly abolished, but which we
seen virtually revived in more modern
s, under a less plausible name. Archbishop
on, the chancellor, instructed the com-
oners to employ a dilemma, in which every
night be comprehended: if the persons ap-
to, lived frugally, they were told that their
mony must necessarily have enriched them:
ir method of living was splendid and hos-
le, they were concluded to be opu-
on account of their expences. This A. D. 1492.
e was by some called chancellor
on's fork, by others his crutch.

ith the parliament and nobles became the
y tools of the king on this occasion. The
er granted him two fifteenths; the latter
cted their vassals to attend him. On the
of October, the king arrived at Calais with
my of twenty-five thousand foot and six-
hundred horse, and laid siege to Bulloigne;
t was soon apparent that he had no serious
tion of pushing on the war to such extremi-
is he pretended, and a negotiation was soon
ed between him and Charles. The latter,
ous to secure Brittany, and eager to invade
, consented to pay Henry seven hundred
forty-five thousand crowns, and stipulated
rly pension to him and his heirs of twenty-
thousand crowns. Thus the king, as re-
ed by his historian, made profit upon his

subjects for the war, and upon his enemies for the peace.

Circumstances now seemed to leave Henry in possession of durable tranquillity; but his inveterate enemies soon raised him an adversary, who long kept him in disquietude. The dutchess of Burgundy, full of resentment for the depression of her family, had propagated a report that her nephew, Richard Plantagenet, duke of York, had escaped from the tower, and was still alive; and she had been looking out for some young man proper to represent that prince.

Warbeck, a renegado Jew of Tournay, who had visited London in the reign of Edward IV. having had opportunities of being known to the king, and obtaining his favour, he prevailed with that prince, whose manners were very affable, to stand godfather to a son, born in this country, to whom he gave the name of Peter, corrupted, after the Flemish manner, into Peterkin or Perkin. It was by some believed that Edward, among his amorous adventures, had a secret commerce with Warbeck's wife, and people thence accounted for that resemblance which was afterwards remarked between young Perkin and that monarch. Some years after the birth of this child, Warbeck returned to Tournay, whence, Perkin his son, by different accidents, was carried from place to place, and his birth and fortune became thereby unknown or difficult to be traced. The variety of his adventures had happily favoured the natural versatility and sagacity of his genius; and he seemed to be a youth perfectly fitted to act any Part, or assume any character. In this light he

been represented to the dutchess of Bur-
y, who, struck with the concurrence of so
circumstances suited to her purpose, de-
to be made acquainted with him. She
him to exceed her most sanguine expec-
ns; so comely did he appear in his person,
aceful in his air, so courtly in his address,
ll of docility and good sense in his be-
ur and conversation. The lessons neces-
to be taught him, in order to his perso-
g the duke of York, were soon learned by
ith of such quick apprehension; but as the
n seemed not then favourable for his enter-
, Margaret, in order the better to conceal
sent him, under the care of lady Brampton,
Portugal, where he remained a year, in per-
ecrecy.

ie war which was then ready to break out
een France and England, seemed to afford
per opportunity for launching this impostor,
Ireland, which still retained its attach-
s to the house of York, was chosen as the
er place for his first appearance. He
ed at Corke, and immediately assuming the
e of Richard Plantagenet, drew to him
sans among that credulous people. He
e letters to the earls of Desmond and Kil-
inviting them to join his party; and dis-
d every where the strange intelligence of
scape from the cruelty of his uncle Richard;
e men, fond of every thing new and wonder-
began to make him the general subject of
discourse, and even the object of their re-

ie news soon reached France; and Charles,
pted by the solicitations of the dutchess of
Burgundy,

Burgundy, sent Perkin an invitation to r
him at Paris. He received him with
marks of regard due to the duke of York,
on him a handsome pension, assigned hi
nificent lodgings, and gave him a guard
person. The French courtiers readily em
a fiction, which their sovereign thought it
terest to adopt; and Perkin, both by his de
ment and personal qualities, was well qua
to support the prepossession which was s
abroad of his royal pedigree. From Franc
admiration and credulity diffused them
into England: sir George Nevil, sir
Taylor, and above a hundred gentlemen
came to Paris, in order to offer their servi
the supposed duke of York, and to share hi
tunes; and the impostor, having now the ap
ance of a court attending him, began to
himself the character he assumed.

When peace was concluded between F
and England, Charles consented to dismis
kin, who found refuge with the dutchess of
gundy. That princess affected to put o
appearance of disgust, and it was not till
a long and severe scrutiny, that she pretend
burst out into joy and admiration, and emb
Perkin as the true image of Edward, an
sole heir of the Plantagenets. Numbers c
English favoured the imposture, among th
sir Robert Clifford and sir William Stanley

The king, informed of these particulars,
ceeded deliberately, though steadily, in cou
working the projects of his enemies. Hi
object was to ascertain the death of the real
of York, and to confirm the opinion that h
ways prevailed with regard to that catastr

persons had been employed by Richard, i
murder of his nephews, or could give evi
e with regard to it; but as only two of then
now alive, and as the bodies were supposed
ive been removed by Richard's orders, fro
place where they were first interred, an
d not now be found, it was not in Henry'
er to establish the fact beyond all doub
controversy.

e was, however, more successful in detect
who this wonderful person was, who thu
nced pretensions to his crown. He engage
ord, who had been admitted into the secre
he hopes of rewards and pardon, to betra
rust; and such was the diligence of his spie
in the issue the whole plan of the conspirac
clearly laid before him, with the pedigre
ntures, life, and conversation of the pr
ed duke of York; and the latter part of th
y was immediately published for the sati
ion of the nation.

everal of the conspirators were immediatel
sted. Some of inferior note were rapidl
igned, convicted, and executed; but mo
nnity was necessary in the proceeding again
William Stanley, one of the most opule
ects in the kingdom. After six weeks d
which was interposed, in order to shew th
king was restrained by doubts and scruple
prisoner was brought to his trial, condemne
presently after beheaded. Historians, how
, are not agreed as to the precise nature
crime for which he suffered.

he fate of Stanley struck the adherents
cin with the deepest dismay; and the in
or, finding his pretensions were becomin

Burgundy, sent Perkin an invitation to repair to him at Paris. He received him with all the marks of regard due to the duke of York, settled on him a handsome pension, assigned him magnificent lodgings, and gave him a guard for his person. The French courtiers readily embraced a fiction, which their sovereign thought it his interest to adopt; and Perkin, both by his deportment and personal qualities, was well qualified to support the prepossession which was spread abroad of his royal pedigree. From France, the admiration and credulity diffused themselves into England: sir George Nevil, sir John Taylor, and above a hundred gentlemen more, came to Paris, in order to offer their services to the supposed duke of York, and to share his fortunes; and the impostor, having now the appearance of a court attending him, began to fancy himself the character he assumed.

When peace was concluded between France and England, Charles consented to dismiss Perkin, who found refuge with the dutchess of Burgundy. That princess affected to put on the appearance of disgust, and it was not till after a long and severe scrutiny, that she pretended to burst out into joy and admiration, and embraced Perkin as the true image of Edward, and the sole heir of the Plantagenets. Numbers of the English favoured the imposture, among the rest sir Robert Clifford and sir William Stanley.

The king, informed of these particulars, proceeded deliberately, though steadily, in counterworking the projects of his enemies. His first object was to ascertain the death of the real duke of York, and to confirm the opinion that had always prevailed with regard to that catastrophe

the king's authority appeared
ent and uncontrolled. Sir Ed-
s, who had been sent over to that
an intention of quelling the par-
ouse of York, and of reducing the
jection, having summoned a par-
olin, he obtained the passing of
le statute, which still bears his
ch, till lately, established the pa-
ority of the English government
y this statute all the former laws
re made to be in force in Ireland ;
uld be introduced into the Irish
nless it had previously received
the council of England. *

treat of Perkin from the coast of
ht shelter in Ireland ; but tired of
life he was compelled to lead in
e passed over to Scotland, where
ceived by James the fourth, and
arriage the lady Catharine Gor-
of the earl of Huntley. The
n subsisted between the courts of
Scotland, induced the latter to
lf ; but James was soon convinced
ish would never receive a prince
urs whom they hated ; and per-
erkin's pretensions were become
he eyes of the populace.

Scots, parliament had granted
sidy of one hundred and twenty

---

union, these regulations which were long
usy and contention, are happily rendered

thousand

thousand pounds, with two fifteenths, heavy imposition excited considerable particularly in Cornwall. The people c county were farther instigated to resist tax one Michael Joseph, a farmer at Bodmin, by thrusting himself forward on every occ and being loudest in every complaint again government, had acquired an authority a his townsmen. Thomas Flammoc too, a yer, who had become the oracle of the r bourhood, encouraged the sedition, by in ing them that the tax, though imposed b liament, was entirely illegal; that the no nobility were bound by their tenures to d the nation against the Scots; and that th nish must deliver to the king a petition, sec by such a force as would give it authority

Encouraged by these speeches, the mul flocked together, and armed themselves axes, bills, bows, and such weapons as are usually possessed of; and chose Fla and Joseph for their leaders. These soo ducted the Cornish through the county c ven, and reached that of Somerset. At ton the rebels killed, in their fury, an of and eager commissioner of the subsidy when they reached Wells, they were joi lord Audley, a nobleman popular in his d ment, but vain, ambitious, and restless temper. Proud of the countenance giver by so considerable a personage, they con their march, breathing destruction to the ministers and favourites, particularly to M now a cardinal, and sir Reginald Bray were deemed the most active instruments oppressions. Notwithstanding their rage a

inistration, as they met with no resist-
ey committed neither violence nor dis-
uring their progress.
y, to oppose the Scots, had already levied
; but though it was an usual saying with
that he desired but to see his rebels," it
until he had selected all his forces that
hed to attack them. They had advanced
very gates of London; and were for-
from their numbers and their valour;
g ill disciplined, and ill armed, were not
for the king's troops. After a short re-
, they were broke and put to flight on
ath. Lord Audley, Flammoc, and Jo-
heir leaders, were taken and executed;
ry pitying the ignorance and simplicity
ultitude, dismissed them without punish-

while, the Scottish king had laid siege
castle of Norham in Northumberland;
the appearance of the earl of Surry, he
ned the enterprise. A truce was after-
concluded between the two crowns, and
perceiving that while Perkin remained in
d, he should never enjoy a solid peace
enry, privately desired him to depart.
ome time after quitting Scotland, Perkin
ed himself in the wilds and fastnesses of
. Impatient, however, of this kind of
held consultations with his followers,
Skelton, and Astley, three broken trades-
nd by their advice he resolved to try the
ns of the Cornish, whose mutinous dis-
, notwithstanding the king's lenity, still
d. No sooner did he appear at Bodmin,
e populace, to the number of three thou-

the inhabitants shut their gate
laid siege to the place; but b
with artillery, ammunition, an
quisite for the attempt, he ma
his undertaking.

When Henry was informed
landed in England, he expresse
being so near, and prepared
crity to attack him. The court
their activity on this occasion w
acceptable service which they
king, displayed equal zeal for t
forwarded his preparations.
beney and Broke, with sir Rice
tened forward with a small bod
relief of Exeter. The earl of
the most considerable gentlem
of that name, took arms of th
and marched to join the king'
duke of Buckingham put hims

nd found that it was not yet exhausted in behalf. Except a few persons of desperate nes who were executed, and some others were severely fined, all the rest were dismissed impunity. Lady Catharine Gordon, wife erkin, fell into the hands of the victor, and treated with a generosity which does him ur. He placed her in a reputable station t the queen, and assigned her a pension, h she enjoyed for her life.

rkin, being persuaded to quit his tuary, on a promise of pardon, was ucted in a kind of mock triumph to don. His confession of his life and adven- was published; but though his life was ted him, he was still detained in custody, keepers were appointed to guard him. Im- nt of confinement, he broke from his keep- and flying to the sanctuary of Shyne, put elf into the hands of the prior of that mo- ery, who obtained the king's pardon for his egé. But in order to reduce him to still ter contempt, he was set in the stocks at tminster and Cheapside, and obliged in both es to read aloud to the people, the confes- which had formerly been published in his e. He was then confined to the tower, e his habits of restless intrigue and enter- followed him. He insinuated himself into ntimacy of four servants of sir John Digby, enant of the tower; and, by their means, ed a correspondence with the earl of War- , who was confined in the same prison. This rtunate prince, who had from his earliest h been shut up from the commerce of men, who was ignorant even of the most common

A. D. 1498.

escaped not the king's vigilance this new attempt, having ren tally unworthy of mercy, wa demned, and soon after han acknowledging his imposture t

It happened about that ve Wilford, a cordwainer's son, e easy credit given to other impo taken to personate the earl of priest had even ventured from commend his cause to the peop served Henry as a pretence fo wards that prince. He was and accused of forming desig government, and raise an insur people. Warwick confessed th condemned, and sentence wa him.

This act of tyranny was the Henry's reign; and though he e

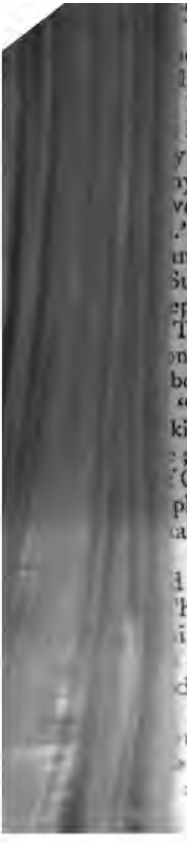
raft, intrigue, and design; and though
olance of this nature be a slender founda-
confidence and amity, such was the situa-
Henry and Ferdinand, that no jealousy
se between them. A marriage, which
projected and negotiated during the
f seven years, between Arthur prince of
nd the infanta Catharine, fourth daugh-
erdinand and Isabella, now took place;
ved in the issue unprosperous. The
prince a few month after sickened and
ich regretted by the nation; when Hen-
ous to continue his alliance with Spain,
unwilling to restore Catharine's dowry,
as two hundred thousand ducats, obliged
d son, Henry, whom he created prince
s, to be contracted to the infanta, by
a dispensation from the pope
marriage, in the event, produced the
portant consequences, and the same year
of still greater moment was celebrated,
Margaret, the king's eldest daughter,
nes, king of Scotland. By this alliance,
ad been negotiated during three years,
oped to remove all source of discord
neighbouring kingdom. His courtiers,
, were not such good politicians as their
When some objected, that in conse-
of this marriage, England might fall
e dominion of Scotland, Henry replied,
Scotland, in that event, will only become
sion to England." Amidst these pros-
incidents, the queen died in child-bed;
infant did not long survive her. This
was deservedly the favourite of the na-

affairs of e, had fallen into a fatuity, which
made hi usceptible of any impression. The
natural l of liberty, engaged him to embrace
a project r his escape, by the murder of the
lieutenan and Perkin offered to conduct the
whole en prise. The conspiracy, however,
escaped n the king's vigilance; and Perkin, by
this new tempt, having rendered himself to-
tally unw thy of mercy, was arraigned, con-
demned, anged at Tyburn,
acknowle e to the last.

It hap very time, that one
Wilford, encouraged by the
easy credi postors, had under-
taken to p f Warwick; and a
priest had m the pulpit to re-
commend h ople. This incident
served Her for his severity to-
wards that prince. He was brought to trial, and accused of forming designs to disturb the government, and raise an insurrection among the people. Warwick confessed the indictment, was condemned, and sentence was executed upon him.

This act of tyranny was the capital blemish of Henry's reign; and though he endeavoured to alleviate the odium, by sharing it with his ally, Ferdinand of Arragon, who, he said, scrupled to give his daughter Catharine in marriage to Arthur, while any male descendant of the house of York remained; this only increased the indignation of every generous heart, at seeing an innocent prince sacrificed to the jealous politics of two subtle tyrants.

There was a remarkable similarity of character between these two monarchs; both were



to land; and the king re-
Windsor with all possible
neglected not, however, the
lain of the reception which
his dominions. "I really
king of Castile, "that your
y had set you far above ap-
y person of so little conse-
ve you satisfaction, I shall
." "I expect that you will
nce farther," said the king;
Suffolk put into my hands,
epend upon his submission
That measure," said Philip,
nour upon you as well as
be thought to have treated
"Then the matter is at an
king, "for I will take that
; and so your honour is
Castile found himself under
plying; but he first exacted
at he would spare Suffolk's

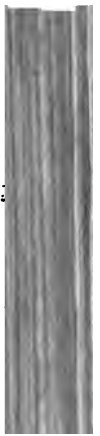
this transaction little more
he decline of his health in-
is thoughts towards that fu-
the iniquities and severities
d a very dismal prospect to
terrors under which he la-
ured, by distributing alms,
us houses, to make atone-
and to purchase, by the sa-
crifice

found two ministers, Empsom an
fectly qualified to second his ra
rannical inclinations. These i
oppression were both lawyers ; th
birth, of brutal manners, of un
per ; the second better born, b
and better bred, but equally unju
inflexible. By their knowledge
men were qualified to pervert the
tice to the oppression of the inno
formidable authority of the king s
in all their iniquities.

In vain did the people look to p
the parliament : that assembly wa
that during the greatest rage of F
sions, the commons chose Dudley
and granted the king what su
manded ; and such were the arts o
of that monarch, that he is said
have possessed the sum of 1.800.0

a violent tempest obliged the archduke
, who had just succeeded to the crown of
e, and was passing into Spain, to seek shel-
the harbour of Weymouth. Fatigue and
ss induced him to land; and the king re-
l his guest at Windsor with all possible
ificence. He neglected not, however, the
tunity to complain of the reception which
k had found in his dominions. "I really
ht," replied the king of Castile, "that your
ness and felicity had set you far above ap-
nsions from any person of so little conse-
ce: but, to give you satisfaction, I shall
h him my state." "I expect that you will
your complaisance farther," said the king;
esire to have Suffolk put into my hands,
e alone I can depend upon his submission
bedience." "That measure," said Philip,
ll reflect dishonour upon you as well as
lf. You will be thought to have treated
s a prisoner." "Then the matter is at an
' replied the king, "for I will take that
nour upon me; and so your honour is
." The king of Castile found himself under
cessity of complying; but he first exacted
r's promise, that he would spare Suffolk's

e king survived this transaction little more
two years. The decline of his health in-
l him to turn his thoughts towards that fu-
existence, which the iniquities and severities
s reign rendered a very dismal prospect to
To allay the terrors under which he la-
d, he endeavoured, by distributing alms,
ounding religious houses, to make atone-
for his crimes, and to purchase, by the sa-
crifice



of those oppressors. Amidst the mos
exactions, which he either sanctio
rated, Henry was surprised by the ne
of death, when, by a general claus
he ordered that restitution should be
A. D. 1509. those whom he had injured
of a consumption, at his fave
of Richmond, after a reign
three years and eight months, and
second year of his age.

The reign of Henry, on the whe
tunate for his people at home, and
abroad. He loved peace without
and this acquired the regard and c
of foreign princes. His capacity w
though somewhat contracted by the
of his heart: avarice was his ruli
and he gratified it at the expence
nourable principle, which should b
lowest ranks of men.

parture of his royal guest; and ordei of
tainers, with their liveries and badges,
wn up in two lines, that their appear-
ht be the more gallant and splendid.
d," said the king, "I have heard much
hospitality; but the truth far exceeds
rt. These handsome gentlemen and
whom I see on both sides of me, are
t your menial servants," The earl
and confessed that his fortune was too
or such magnificence. "They are most
," subjoined he, "my retainers, who
e to do me service at this time, when
w I am honoured with your majesty's
." The king started a little, and said,
faith, my lord, I thank you for your
er, but I must not allow my laws to be
n my sight. My attorney must speak
." Oxford is said to have paid no less
een thousand marks, as a composition
ffence.

he most important law in its conse-
which was enacted during the reign of
was that by which the nobility and gen-
ired a power of breaking the ancient en-
l of alienating their estates. By means
aw, joined to the beginning luxury and
nt of the age, the great fortunes of the
vere gradually dissipated, and the pro-
the commons increased in England. It
ble that Henry foresaw and intended
sequence; because the constant scheme
olicy consisted in depressing the great,
lting churchmen, lawyers, and men of
ilies, in hopes they would be more ob-
i.

cri ing this reign, that Columbu
erica. That great man, aft
ulses from the courts of Portug
his brother Bartholomew to Lo
to explain his project to Henry
crave s patronage. The king invite
over to England; but his brother being
by pirates, was detained in his voyage, a
lumbus, meanwhile, having obtained the
tenance of Isabella, was supplied with a
fleet, and happily executed his enterprise. I
not discouraged by this disappointment,
out Sebastian Cabot, a Venetian, settled a
tol, and sent him westward, in 1498, in
of new countries. Cabot discovered th
land of America, towards the sixtieth de
northern latitude, as well as Newfoundlar
other countries; but returned to Englan
out making any conquest or settlement.
and other merchants in Bristol, made a
tempt in 1502. The king expended f
thousand pounds in building one ship, cal
"Great Harry;" which was, properly sp
the first ship in the English navy. Bef
period, when the prince wanted a fleet,
no other expedient than hiring or pressin
chants vessels.

But though this improvement of navi
and the discovery of both the Indies, v
ever render the age of Henry memorable
important events take their rise near th
period. In 1453, Constantinople was ta
the Turks; and the Greeks, among who
remains of learning were still preserved,
scattered by these barbarians, took she
Italy, and imported, together with their a

age, a tincture of their science, and of
ned taste in poetry and eloquence.
e same time, the purity of the Latin
is revived, and the art of printing, then
nvented, extremely facilitated the pro-
ll these improvements. The whole art
o, was changed by the introduction of
er and artillery; and mighty innova-
e soon after made in religion, such as
ffected those states that embraced them,
those that adhered to the ancient faith
hip. Thus a general revolution was
in human affairs, about this period;
gradually entered on that career of
e, arts, government, and police, in
ith some pauses and exceptions, they
since been persevering.

CHAP. X.

The Reign of Henry VIII.

accession of Henry the eighth A. D. 1509.
ead universal joy and satisfac-
istead of a monarch, jealous,
nd avaricious, a young and graceful
eighteen, had succeeded to the throne,
n in the eyes of men of sense, gave
g hopes of his future conduct, much
those of the people, always inchanted
elty, and royal dignity. Hitherto, he
n occupied entirely in the pursuits of
and manly exercises; and the profi-
hich he made in each, gave no bad
prognostic

prognostic of his parts and capacity. vices of vehemence, ardour, and im which he was subject, and which aft generated into tyranny, were consid faults incident to unguarded youth, v be corrected by time. And as the titles of York and Lancaster were fully united in his person, men jus from a prince, obnoxious to no part partiality of administration which ha unknown in England.

These favourable prepossessions raged by the early measures which braced; his council was composed c had been accustomed to business, bu the least unpopular. The earl of Fox, bishop of Winchester, were the petitors for his favour. The form address of a courtier, promoted th pleasure and magnificence which to prevail. The vast treasures amas late king were gradually dissipated expences of Henry; or if he inte course of his festivity, he chiefly em self in an application to music an which were his favourite pursuits, were well adapted to his genius. he was so unfortunate as to be sed study of the barren controversies of which were then fashionable, he stil a capacity fitted for more useful acquirements.

The execution of Empson and D rather a sacrifice to public opinion tice; yet while Henry punished the of past tyranny, he paid such defe

engagements, as to celebrate his marriage
the infanta Catherine, though her former
riage with his brother was urged by the pri-
e as an important objection.

was at this period, when the situation of
different monarchies of Europe promised, by
ncing each other, a long tranquillity, that
flames of war were kindled by Julius II. an
itious and enterprising pontiff, who deter-
ing to expel all principles from Italy,
fly with a view to Lewis of France, drew
Ferdinand to his party; and solicited the
ur of England by sending Henry a sacred
, perfumed with musk, and anointed with
m. He likewise gave him hopes that the
of most Christian King, which had hitherto
annexed to the crown of France, should
annexed to that of England; and Henry,
red by this expectation, and impatient to
nguish himself in arms, joined the alliance,
h the pope, in conjunction with Spain and
ice, had formed against the French mo-
h.

stead of invading France, however, by the
of Calais, Henry was prevailed on by F
nd to send forces under the marquis of
to Fontarabia, whence it was contended that
ould easily make conquest of Guienne, a
vince in which it was imagined the English
still some adherents. But he discovered
late the artifice of Ferdinand, who, A. D.
ead of seconding the English in their 1513.
rprises on Guienne, was only anx-
to secure to himself the small kingdom of
arre. In this design Dorset refused to con-
; and soon after reembarked his troops for

latter; and obliged Lewis, for
his own dominions, to abandon
Italy. The extreme joy of Jul
proved fatal to his life; and h
by Leo X. one of the most il
that ever wore the tiara. He
generous, affable; the patron o
the friend of every virtue. H
less capable of forming great
predecessor, but was more ge
artful in employing means for
By the negotiations of Leo, the
milian was detached from the
and Henry, notwithstanding his
in the former campaign, was sti
prosecute his warlike measures

To forward his enterprises,
granted a poll tax, which wa
portion to the station and riche
A duke paid ten marks, an ea

loyed on the continent, Dr. West,
Windsor, was dispatched on an emb
ames, the king's brother-in-law; and
ions were given him to accommodate
erences between the kingdoms, as wel
ound the intentions of the court of Sc
ome complaints had already been ma
oth sides. One Barton, a Scotchman, l
uffered injuries from the Portuguese, for
e could obtain no redress, had procured l
f marque against that nation; but he h
ooner put to sea, than he was guilty of
rossest abuses, and committed many depr
ions upon the English. Lord Howard,
ir Edward Howard, admirals, sons of the
of Surry, sailing out against him, fought hin
a desperate action, where the pirate was kill
and they brought his ships into the Tham
As Henry refused all satisfaction for this act
justice, some of the borderers, who wanted b
a pretence for depredations, entered Englan
under the command of lord Hume, warden
the marches, and laid waste the frontiers. No
withstanding these mutual grounds of dissatisfa
tion, matters might easily have been accomm
dated, had it not been for Henry's intended i
vasion of France, which roused the jealousy
he Scottish nation. The ancient league, whi
ubsisted between France and Scotland, w
nceived to be the strongest band of connexio
d James was farther inticed to take part
quarrel by the invitations of Anne, que
France, whose knight he had ever in
naments professed himself, and who sur
d him, according to the ideas of roman
n prevalent in that age, to take the fie

in her defence, and prove h
valorous champion. The r
consort, and of his wisest
vain opposed to the martial
He first sent a squadron
ince of France; the only
seems ever to have posses
still made professions of
trality, the English ambas
and gave warning of the d
Henry, ardent for milit
discouraged by this appea
from the north; and he ha
who flattered him in every
impetuous temper inclinec
dean of Lincoln, and alm
passed in favour all his m
advancing towards that
which he afterwards attai
son of a butcher at Ipsw
tained a learned education,
with an excellent capacity,
the marquis of Dorset's fa
nobleman's children, and so
ship and countenance of h
recommended to be chapla
being employed by that mc
negotiations, acquitted hir
address, that he was univ
a rising man at court. Th
however, for a while retard
and he might have been for
bishop of Winchester cast h
one who might be serviceat
sent situation. This prel
the earl of Surry had tota

r, resolved to introduce Wolsey to the
prince's familiarity, and hoped that he
rival Surry in his insinuating arts, and
contented to act in the cabinet a part
dinate to his patron and promoter. In a
ime, however, Wolsey gained so much on
ng, that he supplanted both Surry in his
r and Fox in his trust and confidence.
admitted to Henry's parties of pleasure,
ok the lead in every jovial conversation,
romoted all that frolic and entertainment
he found suitable to the age and incli-
of the young monarch. Neither his own
which were near forty, nor his character
lergyman, were any restraint upon him,
raged him to check, by any useless severity,
iety, in which Henry passed his careless
During the intervals of amusement,
troduced business, and insinuated those
ns of conduct which he was desirous his
r should adopt. He insinuated to him,
while he entrusted his affairs into the hands
father's counsellors, he had the advantage
of employing men of wisdom and ex-
ce, but men who owed not their promo-
o his favour, and who scarcely thought
elves accountable to him for the exercise
ir authority; that while he thought proper
is his time in those pleasures, to which his
nd royal fortune invited him, and in those
s, which would in time enable him to sway
ceptre with absolute authority, his best
of government, would be to entrust his
rity into the hands of some one person,
was the creature of his will, and who could

as the person who proposed it
his favourite, from being the
pleasures, to be a member o
from being a member of his
sole and absolute minister.
vancement and uncontrolled
racter and genius of Wolse
tunity to display itself. Insa
sitions, but still more mag
pence; of extensive capacit
unbounded enterprise; ambit
still more desirous of glory;
ing, persuasive; and, by tur
commanding; haughty to h
fable to his dependants: opp
ple, but liberal to his friend
than grateful; less moved b
contempt; he was framed to
in every intercourse with o
this superiority of nature wit
as exposed him to envy, an

d on board her, attended by a Spanish
and seventeen Englishmen. Mean-
cable which fastened his ship to that
iemy being cut, the admiral was thus
hands of the French; and as he still
the combat with great gallantry, he
ed overboard by their pikes; and the
ouraged by the loss of their commander,
eir station.

mean time, Henry, having levied a nu-
rmy, prepared to pass over to Calais,
g the queen regent during his absence;
cure her administration from all dis-
he ordered Edmond de la Pole, earl
k, who had been attainted in the late
be executed. In his expedition, he was
ied by the duke of Buckingham, and
he nobility: but of the allies, on whose
he relied, the Swiss alone performed
agements, and invaded France. Maxi-
nstead of reinforcing the latter with
ousand men, joined the English army
w German and Flemish soldiers; and
; the disposition of the English monarch
e bent on glory than on interest, he in-
self into his service, and received an
crowns a-day as one of his subjects and
though, in fact, he directed the whole
s of the English army.

me, a town situated on the frontiers
y, was reduced to the last extremity,
ht hundred horsemen, each of whom
sack of gunpowder behind him, and
ers of bacon, broke through the lines
siegers, deposited their burden in the
town,

town, and forced their way ba
English were collected to surrou

But the English had, soon afte
for the insult. Henry had receiv
of the approach of the French h
advanced to protect another inc
trailles; and he ordered some tro
Lis, in order to oppose him.
France, though they consisted ch
men who had behaved with gre
many desperate actions in Italy,
of the enemy, seized with so ur
panic, that they immediately tool
were pursued by the English.
Longueville, who commanded th
many other officers of distinctio
prisoners. This action, or rathe
monly called the "Battle of Spur
French, that day, made more use
than of their swords or military

Instead of pursuing his victory
turned to the siege of Terouan
after was obliged to capitulate.
instance of Maximilian, invested
that city also surrendered in a fe
bishop of that see being lately
bestowed the administration of it
Wolsey, and put him in immed
of the revenues, which were consi
ing of the retreat of the Swiss,
the season to be far advanced, he
proper to return to England; a
greater part of his army with him.
attended him in every enterprise;
ful mind was much elated with

rity; but all men of judgment, comparing vantages of his situation with his progress, pense with his acquisitions, were convinced his campaign was, in reality, both ruinous glorious to him.

the north, Henry's arms were even more ssful: the king of Scotland with an army ty thousand men, after ravaging the fron- of Northumberland, had encamped on some ground, near the hills of Cheviot, with ty-six thousand disciplined troops. The earl urry advancing towards the invaders, by a ed march towards Berwick, induced the tish army to descend from the hills to Flou- field; and, as an engagement was now be- e inevitable, both sides prepared for it with nquillity and order. The English divided ir army into two lines: lord Howard led the ain body of the first line, sir Edmond Howard e right wing, sir Marmaduke Constable the ft. The earl of Surry himself commanded the ain body of the second line, lord Dacres, the ght wing, sir Edward Stanley the left. The ront of the Scots presented three divisions to he enemy: the middle was led by the king him- elf; the right by the earl of Huntly, assisted by ord Hume; the left by the earls of Lenox and Argyle. A fourth division, under the earl of Bothwel, made a body of reserve. A furious battle commenced, which was continued, till night separated the combatants. The victory seemed yet undecided, and the numbers that fell on each side were nearly equal; but the morn- ing discovered where the advantage lay. The English had lost only persons of small note; but the flower of the Scottish nobility had fallen in battle,

or rather skirmish,
by the English for
in France, which t
expence of blood a
up in Caen, withou
it necessary to ca
gates, on condition
should be restore
the last place in N
the hands of the
the conquest of t
speedily finished b

A like rapid suc
in Guienne; no re
and the English w
from a province w
three centuries.
made to recover i
concluded, the wa
from the continent
was recalled to the

A. D. 1450. The pal
sixth had
crown, and
pay, though late,
under Richard th
in violating, with
succession of their
the house of Mort
the sister of the l

ew. The earl of
great a victory,
uke of Norfolk,
is father, for en-
the third; and
y, who was both
as created bishop

d Henry A. D.
the enter- 1514.
eral inci-
shness of the un-
ling to push the
n off the sentence
nd, flattered with
d daughter of the
f Milan in dowry,
ot only agreed to
ed Maximilian in
ot but be inspired
who had imposed
sed his too great

who had been made
dy to take advan-
represented, that
ut male children,
itable to him, than
he sister of Henry.
to this discourse
le then informed
hich he discovered
appy conclusion;
negotiating the
sily adjusted be-
tead of open en-
mity,

some time, it was kept unburied
died under sentence of excommu
count of his confederacy with
opposition to the holy see; bu
application, who pretended that
in the instant before his death,
of repentance, absolution was
his body was interred. The Scot
asserted that it was not James's
found in the field of battle, bu
phinston, who had been arrayed
bling their king's, in order to
tion of the English, and share t
master. It was believed, that J
seen crossing the Tweed at K
imagined that he had been kille
of lord Hume. But the popul
tained the opinion that he was
having secretly gone in pilgrima
Land, would return again, and

of his sister and nephew. The earl of
ho had gained him so great a victory,
ired to the title of duke of Norfolk,
d been forfeited by his father, for en-
n the side of Richard the third; and
her promotions, Wolsey, who was both
ite and his minister, was created bishop
n.

vith Scotland enabled Henry A. D.
is whole attention to the enter- 1514.
nst France; but several inci-
ned his eyes to the rashness of the un-
. The pope, unwilling to push the
extremities, had taken off the sentence
nunication. Ferdinand, flattered with
f obtaining the second daughter of the
ng, with the dutchy of Milan in dowry,
his family, had not only agreed to
r a year, but engaged Maximilian in
; and Henry could not but be inspired
itment towards those who had imposed
experience, and abused his too great

ke of Longueville, who had been made
t Guinegate, was ready to take advan-
is disposition. He represented, that
was a widower without male children,
ge could be more suitable to him, than
the princess Mary, the sister of Henry.
seemed to hearken to this discourse
ng ears. Longueville then informed
of the probability which he discovered
ng the matter to a happy conclusion;
ved full powers for negotiating the
The articles were easily adjusted be-
monarchs: and instead of open en-

mity, they were engaged in a defensive alli
in case either should be attacked.

The espousals of Mary and Lewis were
after celebrated at Abbeville; but the mon
seduced by the beauty of his young queen,
a course of pleasure, very unsuitable to his
A. D. 1515. stitution, died three months afte
marriage. He was succeeded by
cis, duke of Angoulême, a youth o
and twenty, who had married the eldest d
ter of Lewis. When this happened, C
Brandon, duke of Suffolk, the most comel
sonage of his time, and the most accompl
in all the exercises which were then thou
befit the courtier and a soldier, was at the
of France. He was such a favourite with H
that he once thought of marrying him
sister Mary, who now asked Suffolk, wh
he had the courage, without farther refle
to espouse her? telling him, that her br
would more easily forgive him for not aski
consent, than for acting contrary to his o
Suffolk declined not so inviting an offer
their nuptials were secretly celebrated at
Francis, who was pleased with this mar
as it prevented Henry from forming any p
ful alliance by means of his sister, interpos
good offices in appeasing him; and even
sey, having entertained no jealousy of S
was active in reconciling the king to his
and brother-in-law.

Wolsey's sudden elevation, and his ha
deportment, tended to disgust the nation,
it rivetted him faster in Henry's confidence
valued himself on the choice he had made
preferred him to the archbishopric of Yor
al

allowe e v it the sees of Durha
and of ; wn the pope, observin
his influence over k created him a ca
dinal. His train c of eight hundre
servants, of who 1 y were knights an
gentlemen; and oever was distinguished b
any art or scienc , court to the cardinal
and none paid cou m vain. Literature, whic
was then in its inf , found in him a generou
patron; and both by his public institutions an
private bounty, he gave encouragement to ever
branch of erudition. Not content, however, wit
this munificence, which gained him the appro
bation of the wise, he strove to dazzle the eyes c
the populace, by the splendour of his equipag
and furniture, the rich embroidery of his live
ries, and the costliness of his apparel.

Warham, chancellor, and archbishop of Can
terbury, a man of a moderate temper, and avers
to all disputes, chose rather to retire from pub
lic employment, than maintain an unequal contes
with the haughty cardinal. Accordingly, he re
signed his office of chancellor; and the grea
seal was immediately delivered to Wolsey. I
this new accumulation of dignity increased hi
enemies, it also served to exalt his personal cha
racter, and prove the extent of his capacity. N
chancellor ever discovered greater impartialit
in his decisions, deeper penetration of judgment
or more enlarged knowledge of law and equity

The tranquillity of domestic affairs rendere
Henry more attentive to the state of Scotland
The late king of Scotland had left his widow
regent, on the condition of her remaining un
married. Only a few months, however, ha
elapsed, before she espoused the earl of Angus

and, though a part of the nobility proposed electing Angus to the regency, some of the most powerful of the Scottish chieftains insisted on raising to this dignity, the duke of Albany, son to a brother of James the third, and first prince of the blood, which proposition was carried.

During these transactions, Francis the first had penetrated into Italy, and, gaining the bloody battle of Marignan, had conquered Milan. His success and glory excited the emulation of Henry; but the situation of the other powers of Europe was far from favourable to his views; Ferdinand, his father-in-law, who had often deceived him, was declining through age and infirmities; and a speedy period was looked for to the long and prosperous reign of that great monarch. Charles prince of Spain, sovereign of the Low Countries, desired nothing but peace with Francis, who had it so much in his power, if provoked, to obstruct his peaceable accession to that rich inheritance which was awaiting him.

A. D. 1516. At length, the death of Ferdinand the Catholic devolved on his grandson Charles his extensive dominions; and the more the latter advanced in power, the more Francis was sensible of the necessity of gaining Henry. He had hitherto slighted Wolsey; but he now courted him with the most assiduous flattery; and it was not long before he found the good effects of his policy.

A treaty was soon concluded between Henry and Francis, for the cession of Tournay to the latter; and in order to give this sacrifice a more graceful appearance, it was agreed that the dauphin and princess Mary, both of them infants, should

l be betrot , and that this city should be ıered as the dowry of the princess. Such of agreement were then common among eigns, though it was very rare that the in- ts and views of the parties continued so ly as to render the intended marriages ef- ıal. But as Henry had been at considerable ence, in building a citadel at Tournay, Fran- agreed to pay him six hundred thousand wns, at twelve annual payments, and to put o his hands eight hostages, all of them men quality, for the performance of the article: d lest the cardinal should think himself ne- lected in these stipulations, Francis promised im a yearly pension of twelve thousand livres, s an equivalent of the administration of the bi- hopric of Tournay.

The title of legate, which was about this time conferred on Wolsey, brought with it a great accession of power and dignity. He erected a court, which he invested with a kind of inquisitorial and censorial powers, even over the laity; and directed it to inquire into all actions, which, though they escaped the law, might appear contrary to good morals. The abuse of this court, however, at length reached the king's ears, and he expressed such displeasure to the cardinal, as made him ever after more cautious in his proceedings.

While Henry, indulging himself in pleasure and amusement, entrusted the government of his kingdom to this imperious minister, an accident happened also which excited his attention. Maximilian, emperor, died; a man who, of himself, was deed of little consequence; but as his death A. 15

vacant the first station among christian princes, it set the passions of men in agitation, and proved a kind of æra in the general system of Europe. The kings of France and Spain immediately declared themselves candidates for the imperial crown, and employed every expedient of money or intrigue, which promised them success in so great a point of ambition. Henry also was encouraged to advance his pretensions; but soon found that he had commenced his canvass too late.

Francis and Charles professed from the beginning to carry on this rivalship without enmity; but all men apprehended that this moderation would not be of long durati n; and when Charles prevailed, Francis could not help severely feeling his disappointment in so important a pretension. Both of them were princes endowed with talents and abilities; brave, aspiring, active, warlike; beloved by their servants and subjects, dreaded by their enemies, and respected by all the world: Francis, open, frank, liberal, munificent, carrying these virtues to an excess which prejudiced his affairs: Charles, political, close, artful, frugal; better qualified to obtain success in wars and in negotiations, especially the latter. The one the more amiable man; the other the greater monarch. And as the personal qualities of these princes thus counterpoised each other, so did the advantages and disadvantages of their dominions. Fortune alone, without the concurrence of prudence or valour, never reared up, of a sudden, so great a power as that which centered in the emperor Charles. He reaped the succession of Castile, of Arragon, of Austria, of the Netherlands; he inherited the conquest

conques (nada; election en-
titled hi e ; e the bounds of the
globe seemed to t a little before his
time, that he migl p the whole treasure
as yet entire and un , of the new world.
But though the conc of all these advan-
tages formed an emp , greater and more ex-
tensive than any k in Europe since that o
the Romans, the kingd of France alone, being
close, compact, united, rich, populous, and in-
terposed between the provinces of the emperor'
dominions, was able to make a vigorous oppo
sition to his progress, and to maintain the con
quest against him.

It was Henry's ity to be able, both by th
native force of his k dom and its situation, t
hold the balance ween those two powers
But he was heedl inconsiderate, capricious
and impolitic. Francis, well acquainted wit
his character, had solicited an interview nea
Calais, in hopes of being able by familiar con
versation to gain upon his confidence. Th
proposal was seconded by Wolsey; and, a
Henry loved show and magnificence, he cheer
fully adjusted the preliminaries of the inter
view.

But while Henry was preparing to depart for Calais, he heard the emperor was arrived at Dover. That great prince and politician, apprehensive of the meet ing between Francis and Henry, resolved t make the latter an higher compliment, by payin him a visit in his own dominions. He here i stilled into Wolsey the hope of attaining th papacy; and in confidence of reaching th A. D. 1520

dignity, the cardinal secretly devoted himself to the interests of Charles.

The day of Charles's departure, Henry passed over to Calais, with his queen and court. The two monarchs met in a field within the English pale, between Guisnes and Ardres; and such was their profusion as procured to the place the name of the field of the *Cloth of Gold*. Henry proposed to make some amendments on the articles of their former alliance; and he began to read the treaty, *I Henry, King*; these were the first words; and he stopped a moment. He subjoined only the words *of England*, without adding *France*, the usual style of the English monarchs. Francis remarked this delicacy, and expressed by a smile his approbation of it.

This compliment was soon repaid by Francis. That generous prince, shocked at the precautions which were observed, whenever he had an interview with the English monarch, in order to break off this tedious ceremonial, took with him two gentlemen and a page, and rode directly into Guisnes. The guards were surprised at the presence of the monarch, who called aloud to them, "You are all my prisoners; carry me to your master." Henry was equally astonished at the appearance of Francis; and taking him in his arms, "My brother," said he, "you have here played me the most agreeable trick in the world, and have showed me the full confidence I may place in you: I surrender myself your prisoner from this moment." He took from his neck a collar of pearls worth fifteen thousand angels; and putting it about Francis's,

cis's, begg.. hi to wear it for the sake of risoner. Francis agreed, but on condition Henry should wear a bracelet, of which he le him a present, and which was double in ie to the collar. The king went next day Ardres, without guards or attendants; and ıfidence being now fully established between monarchs, they employed the rest of the ne entirely in tournaments and festivals.

When Henry took leave of Francis, he paid visit to the emperor and Margaret of Savoy at ravelines, and the artful Charles completed the npression which he had begun to make on lenry and his favourite. He renewed assuances of assisting the latter in obtaining the papacy; and even put him in immediate possession of the revenues belonging to the sees of Badajox and Placentia.

The violent personal emulation between the emperor and the French king soon broke out in hostilities. Henry, who pretended to be neutral, engaged them to send their ambassadors to Calais, there to negotiate a peace under the mediation of Wolsey and the pope's nuncio. The emperor was well apprised of the partiality of these mediators; and his demands in the conference were so unreasonable, as plainly proved him conscious of the advantage. On Francis's rejecting the terms proposed, the congress of Calais broke up, and Wolsey, soon after, took a journey to Bruges, where he met with the emperor. He was received with the same state magnificence, and respect, as if he had been th king of England himself; and he concluded in his master's name, an offensive alliance wit the pope and the emperor against France, c

conditic

gust to the cardinal by several
the expensive interview at Guisne
farther by his rashness and levity
king's highest displeasure, was
trial; and the duke of Norfolk, v
earl of Surry, had married
daughter, was created lord stewa
preside at this solemn procedur
consisted of a duke, a marquis, se
twelve barons; and they gave
against Buckingham, which was
ried into execution.

From this tragical scene, the
English were diverted to other
indeed engrossed the attention o
part of Europe. Leo X. by his
enterprising temper, having exha
sury, in order to replenish it, had r
sale of indulgences. The produ
venue, particularly that which ar

Europe was filled with the voice of
innovator.

subsisted in England some remains
lards, the doctrines of Luther secretly
ere many partisans; but Henry had
ated in a strict attachment to the
Rome, and therefore opposed the pro-
he Lutheran tenets, by all the influ-
his extensive and almost absolute
conferred upon him. He even wrote
atin against the principles of Luther;
nce which, if allowance be made for
and the age, does no discredit to his
He sent a copy of it to Leo, who re-
nagnificent a present with great testi-
regard; and conferred on him the
fender of the Faith; an appellation still
the kings of England. Luther, who
heat of controversy, soon published
to Henry; and, without regard to
of his antagonist, treated him with
imony of style to which in the course
nics he had so long been accustomed.
by this ill usage was still more preju-
inst the new doctrines; but the pub-
turally favour the weaker party, were
attribute to Luther the victory in
e: and as the controversy now be-
illustrious, his tenets daily acquired
rts, in every part of Europe.

whose improvidence had given rise
, died in the flower of his age, a little
eceived the King's book against Lu-
was succeeded in the papal chair by
Fleming, who had been tutor to the
Charles. The latter, who knew that

Wolsey had received a disappointment i ambitious hopes by the election of Adrian who dreaded the resentment of that hai minister, was solicitous to repair the b made in their friendship by this incident. paid another visit to England; and b flattering the vanity of the king and the car he renewed to Wolsey all the promises whi had made him, of seconding his pretensi the papal throne. Wolsey, sensible that Ad great age and infirmities promised a s vacancy, dissembled his resentment, anc willing to hope for a more prosperous iss the next election. The emperor renewe treaty made at Bruges, to which some ai were added; and he agreed to indemnify the king and Wolsey for the revenue they should lose by a proposed breach France, which soon after took place, wi any consistent reason.

War being declared, Surry landed troops at Cherbourg in Normandy; and laying waste the country, he sailed to Mo a rich town in Brittany, which he tool plundered. Surry then left the charge c fleet to the vice-admiral, and sailing to C took the command of the English army, tined for the invasion of France.

A. D. 1522. The French were, however, toc dent to hazard a general engage and Surry having drawn togeth forces, invested Hedin; the siege of whi was obliged to raise, and put his troops winter-quarters about the end of October. rear guard was attacked at Pas in Artois e or six hundred men were cut off; nor

orts make him master of one place with-
ench frontier.

lies, however, were more successful in
ere the French lost the bloody battle
a; but on the side of Scotland, though
nt Albany, firm to his engagements
ace, prevailed on his countrymen to take
inst England, they obstinately refused
the borders. Albany observing their
t, withdrew to France; and in his ab-
irry ravaged the Merse and Teviot-
burned the town of Jedburg. The
England, who knew the distressed situ-
the Scots, wished to allure them to a
renunciation of their alliance with
y the hopes of contracting a marriage
the lady Mary, heiress of England, and
ing monarch: but the return of the
oke this project; and by the authority
tes, he assembled an army, with a view
ng the ravages committed by the Eng-
the beginning of the campaign; and
em southwards towards the borders.
however, that the English were ap-
g, and discouraged by the advanced
e thought proper to disband his forces,
e to Edinburgh. Soon after, he went
France, and never again returned to
. The Scottish nation, agitated by
estic factions, were not during several
a condition to give any more disturb-
England; and Henry had full lei-
prosecute his designs on the conti-

ar with France, however, proceeded
r want of money. Henry had caused
a general

was far from complaining of t
sures ; more tenacious, howeve
than their national privdeges,
fused the demand of the king
thousand pounds, divided into
ments ; a sum computed to
shillings in the pound of one
and they only voted an imposit
lings in the pound, on all p
pounds a year and upwards ; of
those possessed of twenty an
shilling on all who enjoyed
pounds and forty shillings a y
other subjects above sixteen yea
a head. The king was so diss
saving disposition of the con
he had not called a parliame
years before, he allowed seve

ion. The pope Adrian the sixth
nent the seventh, of the family of
elected in his place, by the con-
he imperial party. Wolsey could
the insincerity of the emperor; but
disgust, and after congratulating
e on his promotion, applied for a
of the legatine powers, which the
popes had conferred upon him.
owing the importance of gaining his
granted him a commission for life;
s unusual concession, he in a manner
to him the whole papal authority in
In some particulars, Wolsey made a
of this extensive power. He erected
es, one at Oxford, another at Ipswich,
of his nativity: he sought, all over
or learned men to supply the chairs of
leges; and, in order to bestow endow-
them, he suppressed some smaller mo-
, and distributed the monks into other
.

ar with France yet hung in suspense;
as from the treason of Charles duke of
, constable of France, that the allies ex-
e most brilliant success. That prince,
etence of a law-suit, being deprived of
e possessions, and provoked at this in-
ad entered into a secret correspondence
emperor and the king of England.
ancis was absent in Italy, Bourbon pro-
raise an insurrection among his nume-
als: but the French king got intimation
sign; and Bourbon was forced to seek
the emperor's court, where he em-

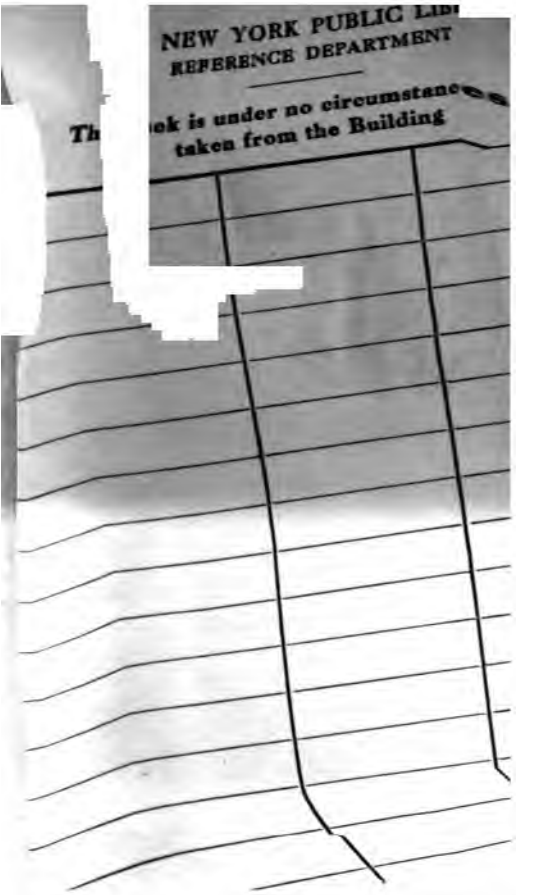
 ploye

ıer of his friendship and protection, he e
ı promise that she never would consent t
dismembering of any province from the mo
chy for her son's ransom. With the empe
however, he put on the appearance of vigour
enterprise; and, in order to have a pretence
breaking with him, he dispatched Tonstal,
shop of London, to Madrid, with proposals
a powerful invasion of France. He requir
that Charles should immediately enter Guien
at the head of a great army, in order to put hi
in possession of that province; and he demande
the payment of large sums of money, whic
that prince had borrowed from him in his la
visit at London. He knew that the emperor wa
in no condition of fulfilling either of these de
mands; and Tonstal, likewise, after his arriva
at Madrid, informed his master, that Charles,
on his part, urged several complaints against
England.

END OF VOL. XIX.

OR VOL. X. OF THE MODERN PART.

T. Gillet, Salisbury-square.


NEW YORK PUBLIC LIB
REFERENCE DEPARTMENT
ok is under no circumstanc
taken from the Building